



KJV *vs.* JW

This eBook may be shared freely. Do not sell.
If you desire a copy in print, please use the link below.

© Copyright David Michael Curtis, All Rights Reserved
Arcadia Florida, United States of America, 34266

AVAILABLE ON KINDLE AND IN PRINT ON [AMAZON.COM](https://www.amazon.com)

Download & share the **KJV vs.** series!

KJV *vs.*



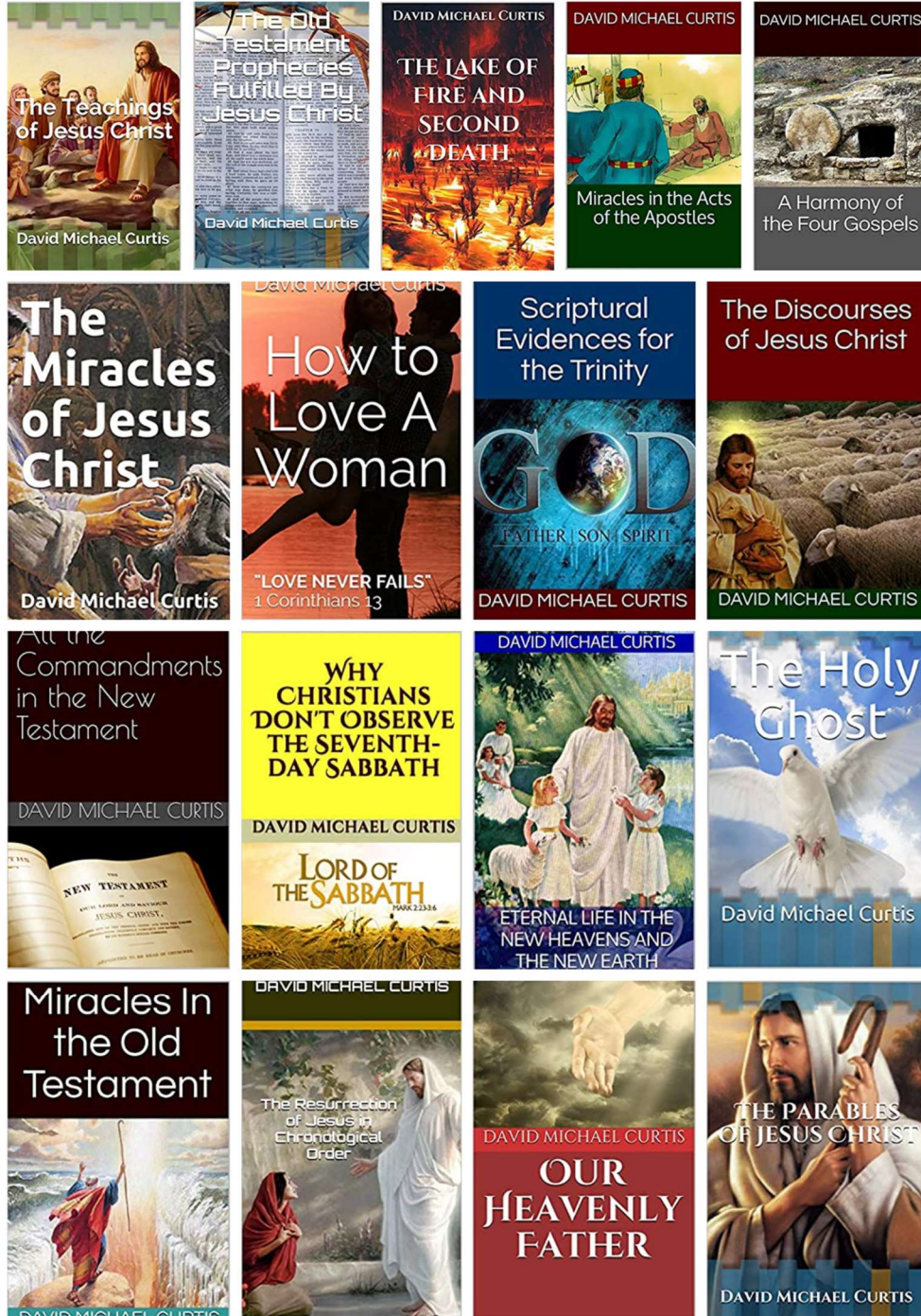
Located inside the eBooks folder:
/ **Topical Bible Studies (KJV)** / eBooks /

Download the complete **KJV vs.** series!

- ✓ KJV *vs.* Baptists
- ✓ KJV *vs.* Calvinism
- ✓ KJV *vs.* Catholicism
- ✓ KJV *vs.* Churches of Christ
 - ✓ KJV *vs.* Islam
 - ✓ KJV *vs.* JW
 - ✓ KJV *vs.* Methodists
- ✓ KJV *vs.* Pentecostalism
 - ✓ KJV *vs.* SDA

amazon books

By David Michael Curtis
On Kindle & in Print



<https://www.amazon.com/stores/David-Michael-Curtis/author/B08DQ8739N>



Free eBooks

By David Michael Curtis

<u>Mainstream Christianity</u>	<u>Roman Catholicism</u>
Apostasy, Sins unto Death Baptism Saves Christ, Titles & Worship of Church, One Universal Death—Immortal Souls Election & Predestination Eternal Life Evangelism Faith, Once Delivered False Prophets Forgiveness God, the Father God, the Holy Ghost God, the Son God, the Trinity Good Works, Salvation Through Hell—Eternal Fire Idolatry Marriage & Family Michael, & His Angels Musical Instruments Original Sin The Gospel of Jesus Christ The Law of God The Lord's Supper The Prayer Book of Scripture Promises The Second Coming of Christ The Seven-Year Tribulation & more....	Baptism Saves Church, Catholic-One Universal Death—Immortal Souls Election & Predestination Eternal Life Evangelism Faith, Once Delivered False Prophets Forgiveness God, the Father God, the Holy Ghost God, the Son God, the Trinity Good Works, Salvation Through Hell—Eternal Fire Marriage & Family Mass, Transubstantiation Michael, & His Angels Mortal Sins Musical Instruments Original Sin Prayer Book The Gospel of Jesus Christ The Law of God The Pope The Second Coming of Christ Venerating Saints Venerating Statues & more....

About the Author,

David Michael Curtis (1974-Present)



I am a sinner saved by God's grace. I have been baptized, and I confess that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. I trust in Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of my sins and the gift of eternal life.

I was born in Roseburg, Oregon. I became a Christian at age 19 in 1993. Over the next seven years, I wore out the bindings of eleven KJV Bibles. Using my own money, I conducted my first evangelistic crusade in 1999. I taught the Bible on the radio five days a week on K.O.R.E. Springfield, OR (2000-2002). I sold KJV Bibles and children's character-building books door to door in Washington, Oregon, California, Texas, Kansas, Georgia, Tennessee, and New York (1999-2007).

I was a volunteer chaplain for a maximum-security prison in Northern California (2005-2007). Since 2001, I have owned/managed 75+ Christian websites. From 2008 to 2010, I was the General Manager for Harvestime Books (an international Christian publishing house). I have also served the church as an elder, a new believer's class teacher, and a vacation Bible school teacher.

A Helpful Illustration Describing this Topical Bible Study eBook

The tallest trees in the world are the Redwoods in Northern California. The Redwoods share a single network of roots; this root system connects **all** the Redwoods trees. This means the Redwoods Forest is also the largest single-living organism in the world.

Imagine that each doctrine of the Bible is a giant Redwood tree supported by 30-40 roots (Bible verses). Examine the neighboring doctrines that share a root system (Bible verses) with that doctrine. Understand that under its surface, all the doctrines are connected by one massive root system within the Bible. My books *show how the various doctrines interconnect and share the same roots, supporting and depending on each other.*

My books use the Bible as its own interpreter, providing all the verses on whichever doctrine is being studied, topically arranged, without commentary. Christ is the only Teacher you need. He promised that you would know the truth, and the truth would set you free.



Table of Contents

Table of Contents	6
Who do you think you are? How Dare you write this book?	8
The God of Abraham, Isaac & Jacob is the LORD (JEHOVAH).....	13
The LORD (JEHOVAH), the Creator.	19
The LORD (JEHOVAH), the King of Israel.	24
I am the LORD (JEHOVAH). Beside Me, there is No Savior.	33
The Trinity & Scriptural Evidence for It	36
Jesus Christ is the LORD (JEHOVAH).....	44
Jesus Christ is the Rock on which the Church is Built.	61
Jesus Christ is the Head of the Church.....	69
Jesus Christ is the Good Shepherd	70
Jesus Christ is the High Priest Over the Church.	74
Jesus Christ is the Only Mediator Between God & Men.	82
Jesus Christ is the Prophet Foretold by Moses.	84
The Human Nature of Christ.	90
The Angel of the LORD	98
Michael the Archangel, “Your Prince.”	101
Created Angels are not to be Worshiped.	105
Jesus Christ is the Son of God.	106
The Death of Christ.	114
The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.	118
The Ascension of Jesus Christ.	128
The Judgment Seat of Christ.....	132
The Cross, Christ’s Finished Work	136
The Atonement: Jesus Christ’s Death on the Cross	138
“This Do in <i>Remembrance</i> of Me.” The Lord’s Supper.	143
“Believe the Gospel” – Faith.....	147
“Repent!” – What is Repentance?	166

“Be Converted, that Your Sins May be Blotted Out”	179
“God be Merciful to Me a Sinner” – Confessing Sin.....	185
“In the Name of Jesus Christ,” – Confessing Christ.....	191
“Be Baptized Every one of You,” – Baptism.....	195
“For the Remission of Sins” – Forgiveness.	206
“Ye Shall Receive the Gift of the Holy Ghost”	215
“Baptism with the Holy Ghost.”	219
“Ye Were Sealed with that Holy Spirit of Promise.”	221
“Except a Man be Born of Water and of the Spirit.”	222
Justification Before God.....	228
Reconciliation with God.	234
Salvation.	248
Institutional Church Denominations.....	271
First Century House Churches	276
Your Adversary the Devil, as a Roaring Lion—Part 1.....	292
Your Adversary the Devil, as a Roaring Lion—Part 2.....	302
Fire Your Pastor, and Tell Him to Get a Job—Part 1	312
Fire Your Pastor, and Tell Him to Get a Job—Part 2	324
Good Works in First Century House Churches.....	334
Scripture Index.	344

Who do you think you are? How Dare you write this book?

I am not an expert on Jehovah's Witnesses, and I have never been a member. At the start, I confess that there are more qualified authors who have done more research and have better documentation about the failed prophecies and reasons why any rational-thinking person should stop reading Watch Tower publications and reject the Jehovah's Witnesses organization than I am, *which is why this book has an entirely different goal in mind.*

For 17 years, I was in an entirely different Christian cult: Four generations of my family have been members of the Seventh-Day Adventist church, and my family has shunned me since I left in 2010. Both sides of my family tree have built Seventh-Day Adventist churches.

For nearly a decade, I engaged in door-to-door and house-to-house evangelistic work, reaching out to people from all walks of life.

I was deeply committed to my journey, even taking to the streets to sell KJV Bibles and children's character-building books door to door in Washington, Oregon, California, Texas, Kansas, Georgia, Tennessee, and New York (1999-2007), all funded by my own money.

I acknowledge that we have different theological backgrounds and church histories; however, we can both trace our roots back to the Millerite movement in the 1840s. So, consider me your long-lost distant cousin.

Today, I do not identify with any church denomination. Why not? **House churches are the only example of churches in the Bible.** So, I will not be trying to convince you to jump out of one church denomination into another. I equally reject them all. I'm a KJV Christian, nothing more and nothing less. This means my beliefs can be held accountable or challenged by anyone from any church, so long as they use the KJV Bible as their only evidence to try to persuade me.

But you must know the rules that I play by; otherwise, you won't be able to convince me to change my mind. So let me be more specific: Doctrinally speaking, I am **a Topical Bible Student** who uses the KJV Bible. In other words,

I must have all the verses on the topic before me and must-see harmony throughout all of those verses before reaching my conclusions.

So here are the rules:

1. No Appeals to Authority:

No Appeals to Authority: I do not care what the Watch Tower Society (Jehovah's Witnesses) teaches any more than I care about Ellen G. White (Seventh-day Adventists), Joseph Smith (Mormons), or the Pope (Roman Catholicism). I equally reject them all. I only regard the Holy KJV Bible as the Word of God. So, quoting anything outside the KJV Bible will be useless in terms of persuading me. Consider this a common sanctuary for us both because I will not use anything other than my KJV Bible to try to persuade you, too. The Protestant Reformation called this "Scripture Alone."

The over 700 topics explored within my books and documents available on the "[Topical Bible Studies \(KJV\)](#)" on **Google Drive** present **every scripture in the Bible on each topic**. As Christ's disciples, we must submit to the authority of the Holy Bible rather than to human authority when they are not in agreement. During Christ's temptation in the wilderness, Jesus said we must live by every word of God. Paul refers to this as putting on the full armor of God.

Before reaching any conclusions, we must examine all the verses on the topic and find harmony throughout them.

- **No cherry picking.**
- **No either-or fallacies.**

Both of these tactics are commonly used by cults on ignorant, unsuspecting people who are easily duped. If you attempt them on me, I will call you out. It won't work. While I was still convinced the SDA message was true, I was an expert Seventh-Day Adventist apologist. So, I am already familiar with tactics used by Jehovah's Witnesses. I am calling it out right now. Jehovah's Witnesses focus on verses that teach Christ was human and pit them against the verses that teach Christ was God. Surprise! Orthodox Christianity has always believed Christ was 100% human and 100% God. I believe all the verses you want to show me, and I affirm that Christ was 100% human! Amen!

The 'EITHER-OR LOGICAL FALLACY' Pits One Doctrine Against Another.

Jehovah's Witnesses denial of Christ's deity pits Doctrine #1 against Doctrine #2

Doctrine #1: The Human Nature of Christ

Matthew 1:1-17; Romans 1:3-4; Hebrews 4:15; 1 Timothy 2:5; Hebrews 2:17; Galatians 4:4-5; 1 Corinthians 15:21; Romans 6:15,19; Matthew 1:18; Luke 1:31; Matthew 1:16; 2:2; Luke 2:7,11; John 1:14; Hebrews 2:14; Matthew 26:38; Luke 23:46; Acts 2:31; Luke 2:21,52; 19:41; John 11:35; Matthew 4:2; 21:18; John 4:7; 19:28; Matthew 8:24; Mark 4:38; John 4:6; Isaiah 53:3-4; Matthew 26:67; Luke 22:64; 23:11; Matthew 27:26; John 19:1; Psalm 22:16; Luke 23:33; John 19:30,34; Matthew 27:59-60; Acts 3:15; 2 Timothy 2:8; Acts 3:22; Philippians 2:7-8; Hebrews 7:26,28; 1 John 3:5; 1 Peter 2:22; Hebrews 4:15; John 18:38; 8:46; Luke 24:39; John 20:27; 1 John 1:1-2; Genesis 3:15; Isaiah 7:14; Jeremiah 31:22; Luke 1:31; Galatians 4:4; Genesis 22:18; Galatians 3:16; Hebrews 2:16; 2 Samuel 7:12,16; Mark 10:47; Acts 2:30; 13:23; Romans 1:3; Matthew 8:20; 16:13; John 4:2; Mark 6:3; John 7:27; 19:5; Acts 2:22; 1 John 4:3; 2 John 7

Doctrine #2: Jesus Christ is the LORD (JEHOVAH)

Exodus 3:14; Mark 6:50; John 6:20; 8:58,24,28; 9:9; 13:19; 18:5-6,8; Isaiah 40:3; Matthew 3:3; Psalm 24:7,10; 1 Corinthians 2:8; James 2:1; Jeremiah 23:5-6; 1 Corinthians 1:30; Psalm 97:9; John 3:31; Isaiah 41:4; 44:6; 48:12-13; Revelation 1:8,11,17; 22:13; Zechariah 13:7; Philippians 2:6; Isaiah 6:1-3; John 12:41; Isaiah 8:13-14; Romans 9:33; 1 Peter 2:8; Psalm 23:1; John 10:11,14; Isaiah 40:11; Hebrews 13:20; Proverbs 16:4; Colossians 1:16; Malachi 3:1; Mark 1:2; Luke 2:27; Hebrews 8:6; Isaiah 9:6; Joel 2:32; Acts 2:21; 1 Corinthians 1:2; 12:3; Romans 10:9-13; Psalm 102:24-27; Hebrews 1:8,10-12; Hosea 1:7; Titus 2:13; Isaiah 43:3,11; 45:21; 49:26; 60:16; Hosea 13:4; Luke 2:11; Philippians 3:20; Psalm 45:6-7; Jeremiah 10:10; 1 John 5:20; John 1:1; Ecclesiastes 12:14; 1 Corinthians 4:5; 2 Corinthians 5:10; 2 Timothy 4:1; Isaiah 7:14; Matthew 1:23; 1 Timothy 6:15; Revelation 1:5; 17:14; 19:16; 1 Samuel 2:2; Acts 3:14; 1 Corinthians 15:47; Genesis 2:3; Matthew 12:8; Acts 10:36; Romans 10:11-13; Matthew 26:63-67; John 1:14; 3:16,18; 1 John 4:9; Acts 20:28; John 10:30; 12:45; 14:7-10; 17:10; 14:16; 15:26; 5:23; 16:15; 5:17; 1 Thessalonians 3:11; 2 Thessalonians 2:16-17; Proverbs 30:4; Matthew 11:27; Isaiah 40:28; John 1:3; Colossians 1:16; Hebrews 1:2; Nehemiah 9:6; Colossians 1:17; Hebrews 1:3; Colossians 2:9; Hebrews 1:3; John 5:21; 6:40,54; 2:19; 10:18; Isaiah 9:6; Micah 5:2; John 1:1; Colossians 1:17; Hebrews 1:8-10; Revelation 1:8; Matthew 18:20; 28:20; John 3:13; Psalm 45:3; Philippians 3:21; Revelation 1:8; John 16:30; 21:17; 1 Kings 8:39; Luke 5:22; Ezekiel 11:5; John 2:24-25; Malachi 3:6; Hebrews 1:12; 13:8; Colossians 3:13; Mark 2:7,10; Jeremiah 3:15; Ephesians 4:11-13; Isaiah 54:5; Ephesians 5:25-32; Isaiah 62:5; Revelation 21:2,9; Acts 7:59; 2 Corinthians 12:8-9; Psalm 2:12; 1 Peter 2:6; Jeremiah 17:5,7; Revelation 5:9; Titus 2:14; Ephesians 5:27; Jude 24-25; Romans 6:11; Galatians 2:19; 2 Corinthians 5:15; John 20:28; Genesis 17:1; 48:15; 32:24-30; Hosea 12:3-5; Judges 6:22-24; 13:21-22

All Christians affirm the human nature of Christ and always have acknowledged the human nature of Christ. So, imagine a team of Jehovah's Witnesses in my living room, turning the pages of their fake New World Translation bibles and encouraging me to look at each of them. Well, my response to each verse is Amen! I believe the verses the Jehovah's Witnesses desperately want to bring to my attention. Why? **I affirm that Christ was 100% human! Amen!**

However, the humanity of Christ does not cancel or make void everything else the Bible teaches about Christ. Such an absurd conclusion, asserted by the Jehovah's Witnesses, is an **'EITHER-OR LOGICAL FALLACY.'** It's a clever trick used by Jehovah's Witnesses from house to house for more than a century, but that is all that it is. It is a magician's trick.

It is not truly a Bible study. Rather, it is a method used to trick you into doubting what the Bible says about the other doctrines concerning Christ. I remind the reader that unbelief in Christ will cause you to forfeit eternal life. This book will present every verse on Christ's human nature, along with several other doctrines about Christ's identity. **THIS IS NOT AN EITHER-OR SCENARIO.** Believe everything the Bible teaches about Jesus Christ, and you, too, will have eternal life.

I, alongside every Christian for two thousand years, lay before you all of the doctrines concerning Christ in this book, **strongly urging you to believe all the doctrines concerning Jesus Christ, not just His human nature.** What Jehovah's Witnesses call a Bible study is, in fact, trying to persuade you to believe one doctrine and disregard the others, resulting in unbelief in several core tenets and beliefs necessary for salvation. What is at stake is eternal life or the lake of fire and the second death.

It's the Holy Spirit's job to persuade.

I am not going to speak softly and whisper everything is okay. Why not? **I believe the Jehovah's Witnesses are at risk on Judgment Day for denying Jesus is the LORD.** It's the Holy Spirit's job to persuade. It's my job to present the case from Scripture. You must work out your salvation with fear and trembling. If you choose to stop reading at this point, then I will kick the dust off my feet as a testimony against you on the day of Judgment. Sound harsh? This isn't a game. The Bible is a sharp two-edged sword. It divides everyone into two camps: the saved and the lost.

Jesus of the Holy Bible is the most loving person in human history, but he is also the most terrifying. Which do you want to meet with on the Great Day of God almighty? If you want His salvation and eternal life, you must believe in Him. The Holy Spirit will help you believe in him. Are you asking, "What must I do to be saved?"

Call out in the name of Jesus and confess that Jesus is the LORD.

Most Jehovah's Witnesses won't get past **this** page in my book because they are forbidden to read anything not published by the Watch Tower Society (Jehovah's Witnesses). However, suppose you have decided to 'break the rules' and are reading this page. In that case, I will compromise. **At the back of this book is a [Scripture Index](#) that references the verses used in this book, which you can use to look up in the New World Translation (the Jehovah's Witnesses Bible).**

I was in a cult for 17 years. I know firsthand what it's like to believe a lie strongly. I am writing this book because if I were a Jehovah's Witness, I would wish someone would have written this book for me. Starting on this page, it's between the Holy KJV Bible, you, and God. I hope we meet in New Jerusalem.

Sincerely,

David Michael Curtis

Ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD.

Isaiah 43:10 Ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, and my servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe me, and **understand that I am he: before me there was no God**

Isaiah 43:12 I have declared, and have saved, and I have shewed, when *there was* no strange god among you: therefore **ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, that I am God.**

The God of Abraham, Isaac & Jacob is the LORD (JEHOVAH)

Is a spirit.

John 4:24 God *is* a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship *him* in spirit and in truth.

2 Corinthians 3:17 Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

IS DECLARED TO BE

Light.

Isaiah 60:19 The sun shall be no more thy Light by day; neither for brightness shall the moon give Light unto thee: but the LORD shall be unto thee an everlasting Light, and thy God thy glory.

James 1:17 Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

1 John 1:5 This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is Light, and in him is no darkness at all.

Love.

1 John 4:8 He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love.

1 John 4:16 And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him.

Invisible.

Job 23:8-9 Behold, I go forward, but he is not there; and backward, but I cannot perceive him: 9 On the left hand, where he doth work, but I cannot behold him: he hideth himself on the right hand, that I cannot see him:

Unsearchable.

Job 11:7 Canst thou by searching find out God? canst thou find out the Almighty unto perfection?

Job 37:23 Touching the Almighty, we cannot find him out: he is excellent in power, and in Judgment, and in plenty of justice: he will not afflict.

Psalms 145:3 Great is the LORD, and greatly to be praised; and his greatness is unsearchable.

Isaiah 40:28 Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, that the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? there is no searching of his understanding.

Romans 11:33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!

Incorruptible.

Romans 1:23 And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things.

Eternal.

Deuteronomy 33:27 The eternal God is thy refuge, and underneath are the everlasting arms: and he shall thrust out the enemy from before thee; and shall say, Destroy them.

Psalms 90:2 Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, thou Art God.

Revelation 4:8-10 And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him; and they were full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come. 9 And when those beasts give glory and honour and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever, 10 The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying,

Immortal.

1 Timothy 1:17 Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

1 Timothy 6:16 Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the Light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.

Omnipotent.

Genesis 17:1 And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the LORD appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me, and be thou perfect.

Exodus 6:3 And I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the name of God Almighty, but by my name JEHOVAH was I not known to them.

Omniscient.

Psalms 139:1-6 O LORD, thou hast searched me, and known me. 2 Thou knowest my downsitting and mine uprising, thou understandest my thought afar off. 3 Thou compassedst my path and my lying down, and Art acquainted with all my ways. 4 For there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O LORD, thou knowest it altogether. ...

Proverbs 5:21 For the ways of man are before the eyes of the LORD, and he pondereth all his goings.

Omnipresent.

Psalms 139:7 Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence?

Jeremiah 23:23 Am I a God at hand, saith the LORD, and not a God afar off?

Immutable.

Psalms 102:26-27 They shall perish, but thou shalt endure: yea, all of them shall wax old like a garment; as a vesture shalt thou change them, and they shall be changed: 27 But thou Art the same, and thy years shall have no end.

Only-wise.

Romans 16:27 To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen.

1 Timothy 1:17 Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

Glorious.

Exodus 15:11 Who is like unto thee, O LORD, among the gods? who is like thee, glorious in holiness, fearful in praises, doing wonders?

Psalms 145:5 I will speak of the glorious honour of thy majesty, and of thy wondrous works.

Most High.

Psalms 83:18 That men may know that thou, whose name alone is JEHOVAH, Art the most high over all the earth.

Acts 7:48 Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet,

Perfect.

Matthew 5:48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

Holy.

Psalms 99:9 Exalt the LORD our God, and worship at his holy hill; for the LORD our God is holy.

Isaiah 5:16 But the LORD of hosts shall be exalted in Judgment, and God that is holy shall be sanctified in righteousness.

Just.

Deuteronomy 32:4 He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are Judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.

Isaiah 45:21 Tell ye, and bring them near; yea, let them take counsel together: who hath declared this from ancient time? who hath told it from that time? have not I the LORD? and there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me.

True.

Jeremiah 10:10 But the LORD is the true God, he is the living God, and an everlasting king: at his wrath the earth shall tremble, and the nations shall not be able to abide his indignation.

John 17:3 And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.

Upright.

Psalms 25:8 Good and upright is the LORD: therefore will he Teach sinners in the way.

Psalms 92:15 To shew that the LORD is upright: he is my rock, and there is no unrighteousness in him.

Righteous.

Ezra 9:15 O LORD God of Israel, thou Art Righteous: for we remain yet escaped, as it is this day: behold, we are before thee in our trespasses: for we cannot stand before thee because of this.

Psalms 145:17 The LORD is Righteous in all his ways, and holy in all his works.

Good.

Psalms 25:8 Good and upright is the LORD: therefore will he Teach sinners in the way.

Psalms 119:68 Thou Art good, and doest good; Teach me thy statutes.

Great.

2 Chronicles 2:5 And the house which I build is great: for great is our God above all gods.

Psalms 86:10 For thou Art great, and doest wondrous things: thou Art God alone.

Gracious.

Exodus 34:6 And the LORD passed by before him, and proclaimed, The LORD, The LORD God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth,

Psalms 116:5 Gracious is the LORD, and Righteous; yea, our God is merciful.

Faithful.

1 Corinthians 10:13 There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is Faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.

1 Peter 4:19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God commit the keeping of their souls to him in well doing, as unto a Faithful Creator.

Merciful.

Exodus 34:6-7 And the LORD passed by before him, and proclaimed, The LORD, The LORD God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, 7 Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity and transgression and Sin, and that will by no means clear the guilty; visiting the iniquity of the Fathers upon the children, and upon the children's children, unto the third and to the fourth generation.

Long-suffering.

Numbers 14:18 The LORD is longsuffering, and of great mercy, forgiving iniquity and transgression, and by no means clearing the guilty, visiting the iniquity of the Fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation.

Micah 7:1 Woe is me! for I am as when they have gathered the summer fruits, as the grape gleanings of the vintage: there is no cluster to eat: my soul desired the firstripe fruit.

Jealous.

Joshua 24:19 And Joshua said unto the people, Ye cannot serve the LORD: for he is an holy God; he is a jealous God; he will not forgive your transgressions nor your Sins.

Nahum 1:2 God is jealous, and the LORD revengeth; the LORD revengeth, and is furious; the LORD will take Vengeance on his adversaries, and he reserveth wrath for his enemies.

Compassionate.

2 Kings 13:23 And the LORD was gracious unto them, and had compassion on them, and had respect unto them, because of his covenant with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and would not destroy them, neither cast he them from his presence as yet.

A consuming fire.

Hebrews 12:29 For our God is a consuming fire.

None beside Him.

Deuteronomy 4:35 Unto thee it was shewed, that thou mightest know that the LORD he is God; there is none else beside him.

Isaiah 44:6 Thus saith the LORD the King of Israel, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God.

None before Him.

Isaiah 43:10 Ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, and my Servant whom I have Chosen: that ye may know and believe me, and understand that I am he: before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me.

None like to Him.

Exodus 9:14 For I will at this time send all my plagues upon thine heart, and upon thy servants, and upon thy people; that thou mayest know that there is none like me in all the earth.

Deuteronomy 33:26 There is none like unto the God of Jeshurun, who rideth upon the heaven in thy help, and in his excellency on the sky.

2 Samuel 7:22 Wherefore thou Art great, O LORD God: for there is none like thee, neither is there any God beside thee, according to all that we have heard with our ears.

Isaiah 46:5 To whom will ye liken me, and make me equal, and compare me, that we may be like?

Isaiah 46:9 Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me,

None good but He.

Matthew 19:17 And he said unto him, *Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.*

Fills heaven and earth.

1 Kings 8:27 But will God indeed dwell on the earth? behold, the heaven and heaven of heavens cannot contain thee; how much less this house that I have builded?

Jeremiah 23:24 Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the LORD. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the LORD.

Should be worshiped in spirit and in truth.

John 4:24 *God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.*

The LORD (JEHOVAH), the Creator.

Isaiah 40:28 Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, *that the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth*, fainteth not, neither is weary? *there is* no searching of his understanding.

Jesus Christ is the Creator of the Heavens & the Earth.

God Created the Heaven and the Earth.

Genesis 1:1. In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.

By The Word of the Lord Were the Heavens Made.

Psalms 33:6. By the word of the LORD were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth.

By The Word Of God, the Heavens Were of Old.

2 Peter 3:5. For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water:

The Word Was with God, And the Word Was God.

John 1:1. In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

He made all things (The Word).

John 1:3. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.

The Word was Made Flesh, and Dwelt Among Us.

John 1:14. And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

He made the World (The Word).

John 1:10. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

God Created All Things through Jesus Christ.

Ephesians 3:9. And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:

For He Spake, and It Was Done.

Psalms 33:9. For he spake, and it was done; he commanded, and it stood fast.

For He Commanded, and They Were Created.

Psalms 148:5. Let them praise the name of the LORD: for he commanded, and they were created.

The Word of God framed the World.

Hebrews 11:3. Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.

Things Seen Were Not Made of Things Which Do Appear.

Hebrews 11:3. Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear.

Thou O My God, Laid the Foundation of the Earth.

Psalms 102:24-25. I said, O my God, take me not away in the midst of my days: thy years are throughout all generations. Of old hast thou laid the foundation of the earth: and the heavens are the work of thy hands.

Thou, Lord, Hast Laid the Foundation of the Earth.

Hebrews 1:10-12. And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands: They shall perish; but thou remainest; and they all shall wax old as doth a garment; And as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed: but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail.

His Son, By Whom Also He Made the Worlds.

Hebrews 1:2-3. Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;

His Son, Upholding All Things by The Word of His Power.

Hebrews 1:2-3. Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;

The Holy One of Israel Saith, “I Have Made the Earth.”

Isaiah 45:11-12. Thus saith the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, and his Maker, Ask me of things to come concerning my sons, and concerning the work of my hands command ye me. I have made the earth, and created man upon it: I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded.

God Himself Formed the Earth and Made It.

Isaiah 45:18. For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain, he formed it to be inhabited: I am the LORD; and there is none else.

By Him Were All Things Created.

Colossians 1:16-17. For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

All Things Created, Visible and Invisible.

Colossians 1:16-17. For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

By Him All Things Consist.

Colossians 1:16-17. For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

He That Built All Things Is God.

Hebrews 3:3-4. For this man was counted worthy of more glory than Moses, inasmuch as he who hath builded the house hath more honour than the house. For every house is builded by some man; but he that built all things is God.

Thou Hast Created All Things.

Revelation 4:11. Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.

For Thy Pleasure They are and Were Created.

Revelation 4:11. Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.

Him That Liveth for Ever and Ever.

Revelation 10:6. And sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer:

The Living God, Which Made Heaven, and Earth.

Acts 14:15. And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein:

Clearly Seen, Understood by the Things That are Made.

Romans 1:20. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:

Worship Him That Made Heaven, And Earth.

Revelation 14:7. Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

The LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth.

Isaiah 40:28 Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, *that the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth*, fainteth not, neither is weary? *there is* no searching of his understanding.

The LORD (JEHOVAH), the King of Israel.

Isaiah 44:6 Thus saith **the LORD the King of Israel**, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; I *am* the first, and I *am* the last; and beside me *there is* no God.

JESUS CHRIST IS THE KING OF KINGS.

Jehovah Himself is the King of Israel.

According To Isaiah.

Isaiah 44:6. Thus saith the LORD the King of Israel, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; I *am* the first, and I *am* the last; and beside me *there is* no God.

The Gospel According to Matthew.

Matthew 1:6. And Jesse begat David the king; and David the king begat Solomon of her *that had been the wife* of Urias;

Matthew 2:2. Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

Matthew 27:11. And Jesus stood before the governor: and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, **Thou sayest.**

Matthew 27:29. And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put *it* upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews!

Matthew 27:37. And set up over his head his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

The Gospel According to Mark.

Mark 15:2. And Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answering said unto him, **Thou sayest *it*.**

Mark 15:9. But Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you the King of the Jews?

Mark 15:12. And Pilate answered and said again unto them, What will ye then that I shall do *unto him* whom ye call the King of the Jews?

Mark 15:18. And began to salute him, Hail, King of the Jews!

Mark 15:26. And the superscription of his accusation was written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

Mark 15:32. Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe. And they that were crucified with him reviled him.

The Gospel According to Luke.

Luke 19:38. Saying, Blessed *be* the King that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

Luke 23:2-3. And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this *fellow* perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Caesar, saying that he himself is Christ a King. And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answered him and said, Thou sayest *it*.

Luke 23:37. And saying, If thou be the king of the Jews, save thyself.

Luke 23:38. And a superscription also was written over him in letters of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

The Gospel According to John.

John 1:49. Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel.

John 6:15. When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

John 12:13. Took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna: Blessed *is* the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

John 12:15. Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an ass's colt.

John 18:33. Then Pilate entered into the judgment hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the King of the Jews?

John 18:37. Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, *Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice.*

John 18:39. But ye have a custom, that I should release unto you one at the Passover: will ye therefore that I release unto you the King of the Jews?

John 19:3. And said, Hail, King of the Jews! and they smote him with their hands.

John 19:12. And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Caesar's friend: whosoever maketh himself a king speaketh against Caesar.

John 19:14-15. And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour: and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your King! But they cried out, Away with *him*, away with *him*, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar.

John 19:19. And Pilate wrote a title, and put *it* on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.

John 19:21. Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but that he said, I am King of the Jews.

According to the Apostle Paul.

1 Timothy 1:17. Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, *be* honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

1 Timothy 6:15. Which in his times he shall shew, *who is* the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords;

According to John on the Isle of Patmos.

Revelation 17:14. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him *are* called, and chosen, and faithful.

Revelation 19:16. And he hath on *his* vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

Foretold.

Numbers 24:17. I shall see him, but not now: I shall behold him, but not nigh: there shall come a Star out of Jacob, and a Sceptre shall rise out of Israel, and shall smite the corners of Moab, and destroy all the children of Sheth.

Psalms 2:6. Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion.

Psalms 45. My heart is inditing a good matter: I speak of the things which I have made touching the king: my tongue *is* the pen of a ready writer. Thou art fairer than the children of men: grace is poured into thy lips: therefore God hath blessed thee for ever. Gird thy sword upon *thy* thigh, O *most* mighty, with thy glory and thy majesty. And in thy majesty ride prosperously because of truth and meekness *and* righteousness; and thy right hand shall teach thee terrible things. ...

Isaiah 9:7. Of the increase of *his* government and peace *there shall be* no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.

Jeremiah 23:5. Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth.

Micah 5:2. But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, *though* thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me *that is* to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth *have been* from of old, from everlasting.

Glorious.

Psalms 24:7-10. Lift up your heads, O ye gates; and be ye lift up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. 8 Who *is* this King of glory? The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle. 9 Lift up your heads, O ye gates; even lift *them* up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in. 10 Who is this King of glory? The LORD of hosts, he *is* the King of glory. Selah.

1 Corinthians 2:8. Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known *it*, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

James 2:1. My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, *the Lord* of glory, with respect of persons.

Supreme.

Psalms 89:27. Also I will make him *my* firstborn, higher than the kings of the earth.

Revelation 1:5. And from Jesus Christ, *who is* the faithful witness, *and* the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,

Revelation 19:16. And he hath on *his* vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

Sits in the Throne of God.

Revelation 3:21. To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.

Sits on the Throne of David.

Isaiah 9:7. Of the increase of *his* government and peace *there shall be* no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.

Ezekiel 37:24-25. And David my servant *shall be* king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in my judgments, and observe my statutes, and do them. And they shall dwell in the land that I have given unto Jacob my servant, wherein your fathers have dwelt; and they shall dwell therein, *even* they, and their children, and their children's children for ever: and my servant David *shall be* their prince for ever.

Is King of Zion.

Psalms 2:6. Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion.

Isaiah 52:7. How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace; that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth salvation; that saith unto Zion, Thy God reigneth!

Zechariah 9:9. Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he *is* just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass.

Matthew 21:5. Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.

John 12:12-15. On the next day much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, Took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna: Blessed *is* the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord. And Jesus, when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written, Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an ass's colt.

Has A Righteous Kingdom.

Psalms 45:6. Thy throne, O God, *is* for ever and ever: the sceptre of thy kingdom *is* a right sceptre.

Hebrews 1:8-9. But unto the Son *he saith*, Thy throne, O God, *is* for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness *is* the sceptre of thy kingdom. Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, *even* thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.

Has An Everlasting Kingdom.

Daniel 2:44. And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, *but* it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever.

Daniel 7:14. And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion *is* an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom *that* which shall not be destroyed.

Luke 1:33. And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

Has a Universal Kingdom.

Psalms 2:8. Ask of me, and I shall give *thee* the heathen *for* thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth *for* thy possession.

Psalms 72:8. He shall have dominion also from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth.

Zechariah 14:9. And the LORD shall be king over all the earth: in that day shall there be one LORD, and his name one.

Revelation 11:15. And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become *the kingdoms* of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever.

His Kingdom Not of This World.

John 18:36. Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.

Saints, The Subjects Of.

Colossians 1:13. Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated *us* into the kingdom of his dear Son:

Revelation 15:3. And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous *are* thy works, Lord God Almighty; just and true *are* thy ways, thou King of saints.

Saints Receive a Kingdom From.

Luke 22:29-30. And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me; That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

ACKNOWLEDGED BY.

The Wise Men from the East.

Matthew 2:2. Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

Nathanael.

John 1:49. Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel.

His Followers.

Luke 19:38. Saying, Blessed be the King that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

John 12:13. Took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna: Blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

Declared By Himself.

Matthew 25:34. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:

John 18:37. Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice.

Written On His Cross.

John 19:19. And Pilate wrote a title, and put *it* on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.

The Jews Shall Seek To.

Hosea 3:5. Afterward shall the children of Israel return, and seek the LORD their God, and David their king; and shall fear the LORD and his goodness in the latter days.

Saints Shall Behold.

Isaiah 33:17. Thine eyes shall see the king in his beauty: they shall behold the land that is very far off.

Revelation 22:3-4. And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him: And they shall see his face; and his name *shall be* in their foreheads.

Kings Shall Do Homage To.

Psalms 72:10. The kings of Tarshish and of the isles shall bring presents: the kings of Sheba and Seba shall offer gifts.

Isaiah 49:7. Thus saith the LORD, the Redeemer of Israel, *and* his Holy One, to him whom man despiseth, to him whom the nation abhorreth, to a servant of rulers, Kings shall see and arise, princes also shall worship, because of the LORD that is faithful, *and* the Holy One of Israel, and he shall choose thee.

Shall Overcome All His Enemies.

Psalms 110:1. The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool.

Mark 12:36. For David himself said by the Holy Ghost, The LORD said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

1 Corinthians 15:25. For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet.

Revelation 17:14. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him *are* called, and chosen, and faithful.

TYPIFIED.

Melchizedek.

Genesis 14:18. And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he *was* the priest of the most high God.

David.

1 Samuel 16:1. And the LORD said unto Samuel, How long wilt thou mourn for Saul, seeing I have rejected him from reigning over Israel? fill thine horn with oil, and go, I will send thee to Jesse the Bethlehemite: for I have provided me a king among his sons.

1 Samuel 16:12-13. And he sent, and brought him in. Now he *was* ruddy, *and* withal of a beautiful countenance, and goodly to look to. And the LORD said, Arise, anoint him: for this *is* he. Then Samuel took the horn of oil, and anointed him in the midst of his brethren: and the Spirit of the LORD came upon David from that day forward. So Samuel rose up, and went to Ramah.

Solomon.

1 Chronicles 28:6-7. And he said unto me, Solomon thy son, he shall build my house and my courts: for I have chosen him *to be* my son, and I will be his father. Moreover I will establish his kingdom for ever, if he be constant to do my commandments and my judgments, as at this day.

The LORD the King of Israel.

Isaiah 44:6 Thus saith **the LORD the King of Israel**, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; I *am* the first, and I *am* the last; and beside me *there is* no God.

I am the LORD (JEHOVAH). Beside Me, there is No Savior.

Isaiah 43:11 I, even I, **am** the LORD; and beside me *there is no saviour*.

Isaiah 45:21 Tell ye, and bring *them* near; yea, let them take counsel together: who hath declared this from ancient time? *who* hath told it from that time? *have* not I the LORD? and *there is* no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; *there is* none beside me.

Hosea 13:4. Yet I am the LORD thy God from the land of Egypt, and **thou shalt know no god but me: for there is no saviour beside me.**

Jesus Christ is the Saviour of the World.

God my Saviour.

Luke 1:47 And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.

A Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

Luke 2:11 For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

Christ, the Saviour of the world.

John 4:42 And said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard *him* ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

A Prince and a Saviour.

Acts 5:31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand *to be* a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

God, according to his promise, raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus.

Acts 13:23 Of this man's seed hath God according to *his* promise raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus:

Christ is the Saviour.

Ephesians 5:23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as **Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body.**

The Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ.

Philippians 3:20 For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:

God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ.

1 Timothy 1:1 Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, *which is* our hope;

God our Saviour.

1 Timothy 2:3 For this *is* good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour;

Titus 1:3 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed unto me according to the commandment of God our Saviour;

Titus 2:10 Not purloining, but shewing all good fidelity; that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.

Titus 3:4 But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared,

Jude 25 To the only wise God our Saviour, *be* glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.

The living God, who is the Saviour of all men.

1 Timothy 4:10 For therefore we both labour and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe.

Our Saviour Jesus Christ.

2 Timothy 1:10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel:

God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

Titus 1:4 To Titus, *mine* own son after the common faith: Grace, mercy, *and* peace, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

God and our Saviour Jesus Christ.

Titus 2:13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ;

2 Peter 1:1 Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ

Jesus Christ, our Saviour.

Titus 3:6 Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour. :

Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

2 Peter 1:11 For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

2 Peter 3:18 But grow in grace, and *in* the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him *be* glory both now and for ever. Amen.

The Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

2 Peter 2:20 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning.

The Lord and Saviour.

2 Peter 3:2 That ye may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour:

The Father sent the Son *to be* the Saviour of the world

1 John 4:14 And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son *to be* the Saviour of the world.

I, am the LORD; and beside me there is no saviour.

Isaiah 43:11 I, *even I*, **am the LORD; and beside me *there is* no saviour.**

Isaiah 45:21 Tell ye, and bring *them* near; yea, let them take counsel together: who hath declared this from ancient time? *who* hath told it from that time? *have* not I the LORD? and ***there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me.***

The Trinity & Scriptural Evidence for It

1. The creation of man in God's image.

“Let us make man in our image.”

Genesis 1:26 ¶ And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

2. The expulsion from Eden.

“The man has become like one of us.”

Genesis 3:22 ¶ And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever:

3. The confusion at Babel.

“Let us go down and confuse their language.”

Genesis 11:7 Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech.

4. The usage of the Hebrew word echad,

“One,” that suggests more than One person

Genesis 2:24 Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

Deuteronomy 6:4 ¶ Hear, O Israel: The LORD our God is one LORD:

5. The teachings of King Agur,

Which suggests a Son of God

Proverbs 30:4 Who hath ascended up into heaven, or descended? who hath gathered the wind in his fists? who hath bound the waters in a garment? who hath established all the ends of the earth? what is his name, and what is his son's name, if thou canst tell?

6. The plural forms used to refer to God

Ecclesiastes 12:1 ¶ Remember now thy Creator in the days of thy youth, while the evil days come not, nor the years draw nigh, when thou shalt say, I have no pleasure in them;

Isaiah 54:5 For thy Maker is thine husband; the LORD of hosts is his name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called.

7. The divine conversations in Isaiah,

Using a plural form of divine pronoun

Isaiah 6:8 Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, Here am I; send me.

Isaiah 48:16 ¶ Come ye near unto me, hear ye this; I have not spoken in secret from the beginning; from the time that it was, there am I: and now the Lord GOD, and his Spirit, hath sent me.

Isaiah 63:9-10 In all their affliction he was afflicted, and the angel of his presence saved them: in his love and in his pity he redeemed them; and he bare them, and carried them all the days of old. But they rebelled, and vexed his holy Spirit: therefore he was turned to be their enemy, and he fought against them.

8. The divine conversations in the Psalms,

Which also use Plurals

Psalms 2:1-9 ¶ Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed, *saying*, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision. Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure. Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. ¶ I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou *art* my Son; this day have I begotten thee. Ask of me, and I shall give *thee* the heathen *for* thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth *for* thy possession. Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel.

Psalms 45:6-8 ¶ Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: the sceptre of thy kingdom is a right sceptre. Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. All thy garments smell of myrrh, and aloes, and cassia, out of the ivory palaces, whereby they have made thee glad.

Psalm 110:1-5 ¶ A Psalm of David. The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool. 2 The LORD shall send the rod of thy strength out of Zion: rule thou in the midst of thine enemies. Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power, in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning: thou hast the dew of thy youth. The LORD hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek. ¶ The Lord at thy right hand shall strike through kings in the day of his wrath.

9. The baptism of Christ, wherein the Father, Son, and Spirit were all Present

Matthew 3:16-17 And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: 17 And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

10. The teachings of Jesus about the Father and the Spirit

John 14:16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;

11. The Trinitarian Baptismal Formula

Matthew 28:19-20 Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

12. The Trinitarian Apostolic Benediction

2 Corinthians 13:14 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen. The second epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, a city of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.

C. C. Ryrie writes:

“There is only one God, but in the unity of the Godhead there are three eternal and co-equal Persons, the same in substance, but distinct in subsistence.”

Robert Culver writes:

“Two expressions have been traditionally employed to designate certain inner relations between the Father and the Son, and the Father and the Son with the Spirit. These two expressions are the eternal generation of the Son by the Father and the eternal spiration (or procession) of the Spirit from the Father and the Son. They began to be employed about the time of the council of Nicea (a.d.

325). They expressed in scriptural language the idea that the Son and the Spirit were eternally with the Godhead. John 1:14 refers to our Lord as the 'only begotten' of the Father. And John 14:16, 26 and 15:26 speak of the Spirit as 'proceeding from the Father and the Son.'" (The Living God, p. 96)

False Views Concerning the Trinity

There are two serious errors about the doctrine of the Trinity.

The error of Tritheism.

This says that the Trinity consists of three separate (but cooperating) Gods.

The error of Modalism.

According to this view, there is but one God who simply reveals himself through three different modes or roles. For example, a particular man could be considered a husband to his wife, a father to his children, and an employee to his boss.

Proposed illustration demonstrating the Trinity. Throughout church history, various illustrations have been offered to demonstrate the Trinity. Seven such examples are as follows. The first four are totally unscriptural, while the final three possess some limited possibilities.

Old Testament Trinity Passages

The first name used for God: Elohim (Gen. 1:1).

This name is plural in form but is joined to a singular verb.

The creation of man.

Genesis 1:26 ¶ And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

The expulsion from Eden.

Genesis 3:22 ¶ And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever:

The confusion at Babel.

Genesis 11:7 Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech.

The usage of the same word, echad, in Genesis 2:24 and in Deuteronomy 6:4. Echad is Hebrew for “one.” These passages teach that God is one, as husband and wife are one.

The teachings of King Agur.

Proverbs 30:4 Who hath ascended up into heaven, or descended? who hath gathered the wind in his fists? who hath bound the waters in a garment? who hath established all the ends of the earth? what is his name, and what is his son's name, if thou canst tell?

The plural forms used in Ecclesiastes and Isaiah.

Ecclesiastes 12:1 ¶ Remember now thy Creator in the days of thy youth, while the evil days come not, nor the years draw nigh, when thou shalt say, I have no pleasure in them;

In the original this is literally “thy creators.”

Isaiah 54:5 For thy Maker is thine husband; the LORD of hosts is his name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called.

Here “maker” should be translated “makers.”

The Triune Conversations in Isaiah.

Isaiah 6:8 Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, Here am I; send me.

Isaiah 48:16 ¶ Come ye near unto me, hear ye this; I have not spoken in secret from the beginning; from the time that it was, there am I: and now the Lord GOD, and his Spirit, hath sent me.

Isaiah 63:9-10 In all their affliction he was afflicted, and the angel of his presence saved them: in his love and in his pity he redeemed them; and he bare them, and carried them all the days of old.
10 But they rebelled, and vexed his holy Spirit: therefore he was turned to be their enemy, and he fought against them.

The conversation between the Father and Son.

Psalms 2:1-9 ¶ Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed,

saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us. He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision. Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure. Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. ¶ I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou *art* my Son; this day have I begotten thee. Ask of me, and I shall give *thee* the heathen *for* thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth *for* thy possession. Thou shalt break them with a rod of iron; thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel.

Psalms 45:6-8 ¶ Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: the sceptre of thy kingdom is a right sceptre. Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. All thy garments smell of myrrh, and aloes, and cassia, out of the ivory palaces, whereby they have made thee glad.

Psalms 110:1-5 ¶ A Psalm of David. The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool. The LORD shall send the rod of thy strength out of Zion: rule thou in the midst of thine enemies. Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power, in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning: thou hast the dew of thy youth. The LORD hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek. ¶ The Lord at thy right hand shall strike through kings in the day of his wrath.

New Testament Trinity Passages

The baptism of Christ.

Matthew 3:16-17 And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

The temptation of Christ.

Matthew 4:1 ¶ Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil.

The teachings of Jesus.

John 14:16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;

The Greek word here translated “another” is allos, meaning another of the same kind. Heteros is the Greek word for another of a different kind. It is never used in referring to the Trinity.

John 14:26 But the Comforter, *which is* the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

The Baptismal Formula.

Matthew 28:19-20 Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, *even* unto the end of the world. Amen.

The Apostolic Benediction.

2 Corinthians 13:14 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen. The second epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, a city of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.

A Scriptural Summary of the Trinity

The Father is God

John 6:44-46 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me. Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

Romans 1:7 To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

1 Peter 1:2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.

The Son is God

Isaiah 9:6 For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

John 1:1 ¶ In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

John 20:28 And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God.

1 Timothy 3:16 And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.

Titus 2:13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ;

Hebrews 1:8 But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom.

The Spirit is God

Acts 5:3-4 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.

Hebrews 9:14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

Jesus Christ is the LORD (JEHOVAH).

Jesus Claimed to be the “I AM” (Eimí eg-o')

Mark 6:50. For they all saw him, and were troubled. And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, **Be of good cheer: it is I (Eimí eg-o'); be not afraid.**

John 6:20. But he saith unto them, **It is I; be not afraid.**

John 8:58. Jesus said unto them, **Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am (Eimí eg-o');.**

John 8:24. **I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am he (Eimí eg-o'), ye shall die in your sins.**

John 8:28. Then said Jesus unto them, **When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he (Eimí eg-o'), and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.**

John 9:9. Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: *but* he said, **I am he (Eimí eg-o'),.**

John 13:19. **Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am he (Eimí eg-o'),.**

John 18:5-6. They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, **I am he (Eimí eg-o'),.** And Judas also, which betrayed him, stood with them. As soon then as he had said unto them, **I am he (Eimí eg-o'),,** they went backward, and fell to the ground.

John 18:8. Jesus answered, **I have told you that I am he (Eimí eg-o'),:** if therefore ye seek me, let these go their way:

As Jehovah.

Isaiah 40:3. The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, **Prepare ye the way of the LORD,** make straight in the desert a highway for our God.

Matthew 3:3. For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, **Prepare ye the way of the Lord,** make his paths straight.

As Jehovah of Glory.

Psalms 24:7. Lift up your heads, O ye gates; and be ye lift up, ye everlasting doors; and **the King of glory** shall come in.

Psalms 24:10. Who is this King of glory? The LORD of hosts, he is the King of glory. Selah.

1 Corinthians 2:8. Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known *it*, they would not have crucified **the Lord of glory**.

James 2:1. My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, **the Lord of glory**, with respect of persons.

As Jehovah, Our RIGHTEOUSNESS.

Jeremiah 23:5-6. Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth. 6 In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this *is* his name whereby he shall be called, **THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS**.

1 Corinthians 1:30. But of him are ye in **Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us** wisdom, and **righteousness**, and sanctification, and redemption:

As Jehovah, Above All.

Psalms 97:9. For thou, **LORD**, *art* high above all the earth: thou **art exalted far above all gods**.

John 3:31. He that cometh from above is above all: he that is of the earth is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: **he that cometh from heaven is above all**.

As Jehovah, the First and the Last.

Isaiah 41:4. Who hath wrought and done *it*, calling the generations from the beginning? **I the LORD, the first, and with the last; I am he**.

Isaiah 44:6. Thus saith the LORD the King of Israel, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; **I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God**.

Isaiah 48:12-13. Hearken unto me, O Jacob and Israel, my called; **I am he; I am the first, I also am the last**. Mine hand also hath laid the foundation of the earth, and my right hand hath spanned the heavens: *when* I call unto them, they stand up together.

Revelation 1:8. **I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending**, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, **the Almighty**.

Revelation 1:11. Saying, **I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last:** and, **What thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.**

Revelation 1:17. And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead. And he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, **Fear not; I am the first and the last:**

Revelation 22:13. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.

As Jehovah's Fellow and Equal.

Zechariah 13:7. Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, and against **the man that is my fellow, saith the LORD of hosts:** smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered: and I will turn mine hand upon the little ones.

Philippians 2:6. Who, being in the form of God, **thought it not robbery to be equal with God:**

As Jehovah of Hosts.

Isaiah 6:1-3. In the year that king Uzziah died I saw also the Lord sitting upon a throne, high and lifted up, and his train filled the temple. Above it stood the seraphims: each one had six wings; with twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered his feet, and with twain he did fly. And one cried unto another, and said, **Holy, holy, holy, is the LORD of hosts:** the whole earth is full of his glory.

John 12:41. THESE THINGS SAID ESAIAS, WHEN HE SAW HIS GLORY, AND SPAKE OF HIM.

Isaiah 8:13-14. Sanctify **the LORD of hosts himself;** and *let him be your fear, and let him be your dread.* And **he shall be** for a sanctuary; but for **a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offence** to both the houses of Israel, for a gin and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem.

Romans 9:33 As it is written, **Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock of offence:** and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.

1 Peter 2:8. And **a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence,** *even to them* which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed.

As Jehovah, The Shepherd.

Psalms 23:1. A Psalm of David. The LORD is my shepherd; I shall not want.

John 10:11. **I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.**

John 10:14. **I am the good shepherd, and know my *sheep*, and am known of mine.**

Isaiah 40:11. **He shall feed his flock like a shepherd:** he shall gather the lambs with his arm, and carry *them* in his bosom, *and* shall gently lead those that are with young.

Hebrews 13:20. Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead **our Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep**, through the blood of the everlasting covenant,

As Jehovah, For Whose Glory All Things Were Created.

Proverbs 16:4. The LORD hath made all things for himself: yea, even the wicked for the day of evil.

Colossians 1:16. For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether *they be* thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: **all things were created by him, and for him:**

As Jehovah, The Messenger of the Covenant.

Malachi 3:1. Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: **and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant,** whom ye delight in: **behold, he shall come, saith the LORD of hosts.**

Mark 1:2. As it is written in the prophets, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

Luke 2:27. And **he came by the Spirit into the temple:** and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law,

Hebrews 8:6 But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also **he is the mediator of a better covenant**, which was established upon better promises.

As The Mighty God.

Isaiah 9:6. For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

Invoked As Jehovah.

Joel 2:32. And it shall come to pass, *that whosoever shall call on the name of the LORD shall be delivered*: for in mount Zion and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance, as the LORD hath said, and in the remnant whom the LORD shall call.

Acts 2:21. And it shall come to pass, *that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved*.

1 Corinthians 1:2. Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called *to be saints*, with all that in every place **call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord**, both theirs and ours:

1 Corinthians 12:3. Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and *that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost*.

Romans 10:9-13 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed. For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. **For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.**

As The Eternal God and Creator.

Psalms 102:24-27. I said, **O my God**, take me not away in the midst of my days: **thy years are throughout all generations**. Of old hast thou laid the foundation of the earth: and the heavens *are* the work of thy hands. **They shall perish, but thou shalt endure**: yea, all of them shall wax old like a garment; as a vesture shalt thou change them, and they shall be changed: But thou *art* the same, and **thy years shall have no end**.

Hebrews 1:8. But unto the Son he saith, **Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever**: a sceptre of righteousness *is* the sceptre of thy kingdom.

Hebrews 1:10-12. And, **Thou, Lord**, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands: **They shall perish; but thou remainest**; and they all shall wax old as doth a garment; And as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed: **but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail**.

As The Great God and Saviour.

Hosea 1:7. But **I will have mercy** upon the house of Judah, **and will save them by the LORD their God**, and will not save them by bow, nor by sword, nor by battle, by horses, nor by horsemen.

Titus 2:13. Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of **the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ**;

As The Saviour.

Isaiah 43:3 For **I am the LORD thy God, the Holy One of Israel, thy Saviour**: I gave Egypt *for* thy ransom, Ethiopia and Seba for thee.

Isaiah 43:11. **I, even I, am the LORD; and beside me there is no saviour.**

Isaiah 45:21. Tell ye, and bring *them* near; yea, let them take counsel together: who hath declared this from ancient time? *who* hath told it from that time? **have not I the LORD?** and **there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me.**

Isaiah 49:26. And I will feed them that oppress thee with their own flesh; and they shall be drunken with their own blood, as with sweet wine: and all flesh shall know that **I the LORD am thy Saviour and thy Redeemer**, the mighty One of Jacob.

Isaiah 60:16. Thou shalt also suck the milk of the Gentiles, and shalt suck the breast of kings: and thou shalt know that **I the LORD am thy Saviour and thy Redeemer**, the mighty One of Jacob.

Hosea 13:4. Yet **I am the LORD thy God** from the land of Egypt, and **thou shalt know no god but me: for there is no saviour beside me.**

Luke 2:11. For unto you is born this day in the city of David **a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.**

Philippians 3:20. For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also **we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ**:

As God Over All.

Psalms 45:6-7. **Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever**: the sceptre of thy kingdom *is* a right sceptre. Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: **therefore God, thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.**

As the True God.

Jeremiah 10:10. But **the LORD is the true God, he is the living God, and an everlasting king**: at his wrath the earth shall tremble, and the nations shall not be able to abide his indignation.

1 John 5:20. And we know that **the Son of God is come**, and hath given us an understanding, **that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life.**

As God the Word.

John 1:1. In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and **the Word was God.**

As God, the Judge.

Ecclesiastes 12:14. For **God shall bring every work into judgment**, with every secret thing, whether *it be* good, or whether *it be* evil.

1 Corinthians 4:5. Therefore judge nothing before the time, until **the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts:** and then shall every man have praise of God.

2 Corinthians 5:10. For **we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ;** that every one may receive the things *done* in *his* body, according to that he hath done, whether *it be* good or bad.

2 Timothy 4:1. I charge *thee* therefore **before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead** at his appearing and his kingdom;

As Emmanuel.

Isaiah 7:14. Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; **Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel.**

Matthew 1:23. Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.

As KING Of Kings and LORD Of Lords.

1 Timothy 6:15. Which in his times he shall shew, *who is* the blessed and **only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords;**

Revelation 1:5.. And from Jesus Christ, *who is* the faithful witness, *and* the first begotten of the dead, and **the prince of the kings of the earth.** Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,

Revelation 17:14. These shall make war with **the Lamb**, and **the Lamb** shall overcome them: for **he is Lord of lords, and King of kings:** and they that are with him *are* called, and chosen, and faithful.

Revelation 19:16 And he hath on *his* vesture and on his thigh a name written, **KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.**

As The Holy One.

1 Samuel 2:2. There is none holy as the **LORD:** for there is none beside thee: neither is there any rock like our God.

Acts 3:14. But ye denied the Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you;

As The Lord from Heaven.

1 Corinthians 15:47. The first man *is* of the earth, earthy: **the second man is the Lord from heaven.**

As Lord of the Sabbath.

Genesis 2:3. And **God blessed the seventh day**, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made.

Matthew 12:8. For **the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath day.**

As Lord of All.

Acts 10:36. The word which *God* sent unto the children of Israel, **preaching peace by Jesus Christ: (he is Lord of all:)**

Romans 10:11-13. For the scripture saith, **Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.** For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. **For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.**

As Son of God.

Matthew 26:63-67. But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God. Jesus saith unto him, **Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.** Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy. What think ye? They answered and said, He is guilty of death. Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him; and others smote *him* with the palms of their hands,

As The Only Begotten Son of the Father.

John 1:14. And **the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us,** (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

John 3:16. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that **whosoever believeth in him should not perish,** but have everlasting life.

John 3:18. **He that believeth on him is not condemned:** but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

1 John 4:9.. In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that **God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him.**

His Blood Is Called the Blood of God.

Acts 20:28. Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to **feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.**

As One with the Father.

John 10:30. **I and my Father are one.**

John 12:45. And **he that seeth me seeth him that sent me.**

John 14:7-10. If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him. Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? **he that hath seen me hath seen the Father**; and how sayest thou *then*, Shew us the Father? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works.

John 17:10. And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them.

As Sending the Spirit, Equally with The Father.

John 14:16. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;

John 15:26. But when the Comforter is come, **whom I will send unto you** from the Father, *even* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me:

As Entitled to Equal Honor with The Father.

John 5:23 That **all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father.** He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.

As Owner of All Things, Equally with the Father.

John 16:15. **All things that the Father hath are mine:** therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew *it* unto you.

As Unrestricted by the Law of the Sabbath, Equally with The Father.

John 5:17. But Jesus answered them, **My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.**

As The Source of Grace, Equally with the Father.

1 Thessalonians 3:11. Now **God himself and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ,** direct our way unto you.

2 Thessalonians 2:16-17. Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God, **even our Father,** which hath loved us, and hath given *us* everlasting consolation and good hope through grace, Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and work.

As Unsearchable, Equally with the Father.

Proverbs 30:4. Who hath ascended up into heaven, or descended? who hath gathered the wind in his fists? who hath bound the waters in a garment? who hath established all the ends of the earth? **what is his name, and what is his son's name**, if thou canst tell?

Matthew 11:27. *All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him.*

As Creator of All Things.

Isaiah 40:28. Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, *that the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth*, fainteth not, neither is weary? *there is* no searching of his understanding.

John 1:3. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.

Colossians 1:16. For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether *they be* thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: **all things were created by him, and for him:**

Hebrews 1:2. Hath in these last days spoken unto us by **his Son**, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, **by whom also he made the worlds;**

As Supporter and Preserver of All Things.

Nehemiah 9:6. Thou, even thou, art **LORD alone**; thou hast made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth, and all *things* that *are* therein, the seas, and all that *is* therein, and **thou preservest them all;** and the host of heaven worshippeth thee.

Colossians 1:17. And he is before all things, and **by him all things consist.**

Hebrews 1:3. Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;

As Possessed of the Fulness of the God Head.

Colossians 2:9. For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.

Hebrews 1:3. Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;

As Raising the Dead.

John 5:21. For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth *them*; even so **the Son quickeneth whom he will.**

John 6:40. And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and **I will raise him up at the last day.**

John 6:54. Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and **I will raise him up at the last day.**

As Raising Himself from the Dead.

John 2:19. Jesus answered and said unto them, **Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.**

John 10:18. No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. **I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again.** This commandment have I received of my Father.

As Eternal.

Isaiah 9:6. For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, **The mighty God, The everlasting Father,** The Prince of Peace.

Micah 5:2. But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, *though* thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me *that is* to be ruler in Israel; **whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting.**

John 1:1. In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and **the Word was God.**

Colossians 1:17. And **he is before all things,** and by him all things consist.

Hebrews 1:8-10. But unto the Son he saith, THY THRONE, O GOD, IS FOR EVER AND EVER: A SCEPTRE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS IS THE SCEPTRE OF THY KINGDOM. THOU HAST LOVED RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND HATED INIQUITY; THEREFORE GOD, EVEN THY GOD, HATH ANOINTED THEE WITH THE OIL OF GLADNESS ABOVE THY FELLOWS. AND, **Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands:**

Revelation 1:8. **I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending,** saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, **the Almighty.**

As Omnipresent.

Matthew 18:20. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, **there am I in the midst of them.**

Matthew 28:20. Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, **lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world.** Amen.

John 3:13. And **no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even** the Son of man which is in heaven.

As Omnipotent.

Psalms 45:3. Gird thy sword upon *thy* thigh, **O most mighty,** with thy glory and thy majesty.

Philippians 3:21. Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby **he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.**

Revelation 1:8. **I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending,** saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, **the Almighty.**

As Omniscient.

John 16:30. Now are we sure that **thou knowest all things,** and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God.

John 21:17. He saith unto him the third time, **Simon, son of Jonas, lovest thou me?** Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, **Lord, thou knowest all things;** thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, **Feed my sheep.**

Discerning the Thoughts of the Heart.

1 Kings 8:39. Then hear thou in heaven thy dwelling place, and forgive, and do, and give to every man according to his ways, **whose heart thou knowest; (for thou, even thou only, knowest the hearts of all the children of men;)**

Luke 5:22. But when Jesus perceived their thoughts, he answering said unto them, **What reason ye in your hearts?**

Ezekiel 11:5. And the Spirit of the LORD fell upon me, and said unto me, Speak; Thus saith the LORD; Thus have ye said, O house of Israel: **for I know the things that come into your mind, every one of them.**

John 2:24-25. But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because **he knew all men**, And needed not that any should testify of man: for **he knew what was in man**.

As Unchangeable.

Malachi 3:6. For **I am the LORD, I change not**; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed.

Hebrews 1:12. And as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed: but **thou art the same**, and thy years shall not fail.

Hebrews 13:8. **Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.**

As Having Power to Forgive Sins.

Colossians 3:13. Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as **Christ forgave you**, so also *do* ye.

Mark 2:7. Why doth this *man* thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only?

Mark 2:10. *But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins,* (he saith to the sick of the palsy,)

As Giver of Pastors To The Church.

Jeremiah 3:15. And **I will give you pastors according to mine heart**, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.

Ephesians 4:11-13. And **he gave** some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, **pastors** and teachers; For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ:

As Husband of the Church.

Isaiah 54:5. For thy **Maker is thine husband**; the **LORD of hosts is his name**; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; **The God of the whole earth shall he be called.**

Ephesians 5:25-32. Husbands, love your wives, even as **Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it**; That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, **That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.** So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. ...

Isaiah 62:5. For as a young man marrieth a virgin, so shall thy sons marry thee: and **as the bridegroom rejoiceth over the bride, so shall thy God rejoice over thee.**

Revelation 21:2. And I John saw **the holy city, new Jerusalem**, coming down from God out of heaven, **prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.**

Revelation 21:9. And there came unto me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, **I will shew thee the bride, the Lamb's wife.**

As The Object of Divine Worship.

Acts 7:59. And they stoned **Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus**, receive my spirit.

2 Corinthians 12:8-9. For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me. And he said unto me, **My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness.** Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that **the power of Christ** may rest upon me.

As The Object of Faith.

Psalms 2:12. Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish *from* the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. **Blessed are all they that put their trust in him.**

1 Peter 2:6. Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and **he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.**

Jeremiah 17:5,7. **THUS SAITH THE LORD; CURSED BE THE MAN THAT TRUSTETH IN MAN, AND MAKETH FLESH HIS ARM, AND WHOSE HEART DEPARTETH FROM THE LORD.** **Blessed is the man that trusteth in the LORD, and whose hope the LORD is.**

God, Redeems and Purifies the Church To Himself.

Revelation 5:9. And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for **thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood** out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

Titus 2:14. **Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.**

As God, He Presents the Church to Himself.

Ephesians 5:27. That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

Jude 24-25. Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy, To the only wise God our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.

Saints Live to Him as God.

Romans 6:11. Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but **alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.**

Galatians 2:19. For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might **live unto God.**

2 Corinthians 5:15. And *that* he died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again.

Acknowledged By His Apostles.

John 20:28. And Thomas answered and said unto him, **My Lord and my God.**

Acknowledged By the Old Testament Saints.

Genesis 17:1. And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, **the LORD appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God;** walk before me, and be thou perfect.

Genesis 48:15. And he blessed Joseph, and said, **God, before whom my fathers Abraham and Isaac did walk, the God which fed me all my life long unto this day,**

Genesis 32:24-30. And Jacob was left alone; and there wrestled a man with him until the breaking of the day. And when he saw that he prevailed not against him, he touched the hollow of his thigh; and the hollow of Jacob's thigh was out of joint, as he wrestled with him. And he said, Let me go, for the day breaketh. And he said, I will not let thee go, except thou bless me. And he said unto him, What is thy name? And he said, Jacob. ...

Hosea 12:3-5. He took his brother by the heel in the womb, and by his strength he had power with God: 4 Yea, he had power over the angel, and prevailed: he wept, and made supplication unto him: he found him *in* Bethel, and there he spake with us; 5 **Even the LORD God of hosts; the LORD is his memorial.**

Judges 6:22-24. And when Gideon perceived that **he was an angel of the LORD,** Gideon said, Alas, O Lord GOD! for because **I have seen an angel of the LORD face to face.** And **THE LORD SAID UNTO HIM, PEACE BE UNTO THEE; FEAR NOT: THOU SHALT NOT DIE.** Then Gideon built an altar there unto the LORD, and called it Jehovahshalom: unto this day it is yet in Ophrah of the Abiezrites.

Judges 13:21-22 But **the angel of the LORD** did no more appear to Manoah and to his wife. Then Manoah knew that **he was an angel of the LORD**. And Manoah said unto his wife, We shall surely die, because **we have seen God**.

Jesus Christ is the Rock on which the Church is Built.

Matthew 16:18. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and **upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.**

The Rock Is Perfect and Without Iniquity.

Deuteronomy 32:3-4. Because **I will publish the name of the LORD:** ascribe ye greatness unto our God. **He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.**

Deuteronomy 32:31. For their rock is not as our Rock, even our enemies themselves *being* judges.

Jesus Christ Is An Immovable Rock—He Did No Sin.

1 Peter 2:22. Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth:

2 Corinthians 5:21. For he hath made him *to be* sin for us, **who knew no sin;** that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

Peter Was A “Tiny Stone”—A Sinful Man.

John 1:42. And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, **Thou art Simon the son of Jona: thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, A stone.**

Luke 5:8. When Simon Peter saw *it*, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, **Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord.**

Who is a Rock Save Our God?

1 Samuel 2:2. *There is* none holy as the LORD: **for *there is* none beside thee: neither *is there* any rock like our God.**

2 Samuel 22:32. For who *is* God, save the LORD? and who *is* a rock, save our God?

Psalms 18:31. For who *is* God save the LORD? or who *is* a rock save our God?

That Rock Was Christ.

1 Corinthians 10:4. And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and **that Rock was Christ.**

The foundation of the Church is Jesus Christ.

1 Corinthians 3:11. For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

Jesus Christ Himself Being The Chief Corner Stone.

Matthew 21:42. Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, **The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner:** this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?

Mark 12:10. And have ye not read this scripture; **The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner:**

Luke 20:17. And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, **The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner?**

Acts 4:11. This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

Ephesians 2:20. And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;

1 Peter 2:7-9. Unto you therefore which believe *he is* precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, *even to them* which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed. But ye *are* a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

The Head of All Principality And Power.

Colossians 2:10. And ye are complete in him, **which is the head of all principality and power:**

Thou Art Exalted as Head Above All.

1 Chronicles 29:11. Thine, O LORD, *is* the greatness, and the power, and the glory, and the victory, and the majesty: for all *that is* in the heaven and in the earth *is thine*; thine *is* the kingdom, O LORD, and **thou art exalted as head above all.**

Psalms 57:11. Be thou exalted, O God, above the heavens: *let thy glory be* above all the earth.

The King Of Heaven.

Daniel 4:37. Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise and extol and honour the King of heaven, all whose works *are* truth, and his ways judgment: and those that walk in pride he is able to abase.

Glory Through Jesus Christ.

Romans 16:27. To God only wise, *be* glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen.

Abraham's Promised Seed is Christ.

Galatians 3:16. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, **And to thy seed, which is Christ.**

All Things Were Created By Him, And For Him.

Colossians 1:16-18. For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, **whether *they be* thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers:** all things were created by him, and for him: And **he is before all things**, and by him all things consist. And **he is the head of the body, the church:** who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; **that in all *things* he might have the preeminence.**

Jesus Christ Is Far Above All Principality, And Power.

Ephesians 1:20-23. Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set *him* at his own right hand in the heavenly *places*, **Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: And hath put all *things* under his feet, and gave him *to be* the head over all *things* to the church,** Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

Jesus Christ Is The Head of the Church.

Ephesians 4:15-16. But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is **the head, *even* Christ:** From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

Ephesians 5:23. For the husband is the head of the wife, **even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body.**

Colossians 1:18-19. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all *things* he might have the preeminence. For it pleased *the Father* that in him should all fulness dwell;

God Hath Given Him a Name Which Is Above Every Name.

Philippians 2:9-11. Wherefore **God** also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of **Jesus** every knee should bow, of *things* in heaven, and *things* in earth, and *things* under the earth; And *that* every tongue should confess that **Jesus Christ is Lord**, to the glory of God the Father.

Angels, Authorities, And Powers Made Subject unto Him.

1 Peter 3:22. Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto him.

1 Peter 5:11. To him *be* glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

2 Peter 3:18. But grow in grace, and *in* the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him *be* glory both now and for ever. Amen.

Jude 25. To the only wise God our Saviour, *be* glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.

Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God Almighty.

Revelation 4:8-11. And the four beasts had each of them six wings about *him*; and *they were* full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, **Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.** And when those beasts **give glory and honour and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever,** The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying, **Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.**

Worthy Is The Lamb That Was Slain To Receive Power.

Revelation 5:9-14. And they sung a new song, saying, **Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood** out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth. And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about

Only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords.

Psalm 47:2. For the **LORD** most high *is* terrible; *he is* a great King over all the earth.

Revelation 5:11-14. And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne and the beasts and the elders: and the number of them was **ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands**; Saying with a loud voice, **Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.** And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, **Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.** And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four *and* twenty elders **fell down and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.**

Revelation 7:12. Saying, **Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.**

Revelation 19:1. And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, **Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, unto the Lord our God:**

Revelation 19:6. And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying, **Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.**

Earth.

Psalm 83:18. That *men* may know that thou, **whose name alone is JEHOVAH, art** the most high over all the earth.

Jeremiah 10:10. But the **LORD is the true God, he is the living God, and an everlasting king:** at his wrath the earth shall tremble, and the nations shall not be able to abide his indignation.

The King Eternal, Immortal, Invisible, The Only Wise God

1 Timothy 1:17. Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, *be* honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

1 Timothy 6:13-16. I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and *before* Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession; That thou keep *this* commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of **our Lord Jesus Christ:** Which in his times he shall shew, *who is* the blessed and **only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; 16 Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.**

KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

Revelation 17:14. These shall make war with the Lamb, and **the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings:** and they that are with him *are* called, and chosen, and faithful.

Revelation 19:16. And he hath on *his* vesture and on his thigh a name written, **KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.**

Jesus Kingdom Is Not Yet On Earth.

John 18:36. Jesus answered, **My kingdom is not of this world:** if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.

Matthew 6:10. **Thy kingdom come.** Thy will be done in earth, as *it is* in heaven.

Matthew 6:13. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: **For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.**

A Kingdom Which Shall Never Be Destroyed.

Daniel 2:44-45. And IN THE DAYS OF THESE KINGS SHALL THE **GOD OF HEAVEN SET UP A KINGDOM, WHICH SHALL NEVER BE DESTROYED:** and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, *but* it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever. Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter: and the dream *is* certain, and the interpretation thereof sure.

Daniel 4:34. And at the end of the days I Nebuchadnezzar lifted up mine eyes unto heaven, and mine understanding returned unto me, and **I blessed the most High, and I praised and honoured him that liveth for ever, WHOSE DOMINION IS AN EVERLASTING DOMINION, AND HIS KINGDOM IS FROM GENERATION TO GENERATION:**

The Everlasting Kingdom is Given to Jesus Christ.

Daniel 7:13-14. I saw in the night visions, and, **behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days,** and they brought him near before him. **AND THERE WAS GIVEN HIM DOMINION, AND GLORY, AND A KINGDOM,** that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: **HIS DOMINION IS AN EVERLASTING DOMINION, WHICH SHALL NOT PASS AWAY, AND HIS KINGDOM THAT WHICH SHALL NOT BE DESTROYED.**

Matthew 26:63-64. But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God. Jesus saith unto him, **Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.**

Ascribe Righteousness to My Maker.

Deuteronomy 32:3. Because I will publish the name of the LORD: **ascribe ye greatness unto our God.**

Job 36:3. I will fetch my knowledge from afar, and will **ascribe righteousness to my Maker.**

Psalms 68:34. **Ascribe ye strength unto God:** his excellency *is* over Israel, and his strength *is* in the clouds.

Their Rock Is Not As Our Rock.

Deuteronomy 32:31. For their rock *is* not as our Rock, even our enemies themselves *being* judges.

A Wise Man, Which Built His House Upon A Rock.

Matthew 7:21-29. *Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.* And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine: For he taught them as *one* having authority, and not as the scribes.

Water from the Rock in Horeb (Exodus 17:5-7)

Exodus 17:5-7. And the LORD said unto Moses, Go on before the people, and take with thee of the elders of Israel; and thy rod, wherewith thou smotest the river, take in thine hand, and go. Behold, I will stand before thee there upon the rock in Horeb; **and thou shalt smite the rock, and there shall come water out of it, that the people may drink.** And Moses did so in the sight of the elders of Israel. And he called the name of the place Massah, and Meribah, because of the chiding of the children of Israel, and because they tempted the LORD, saying, Is the LORD among us, or not?

Water Flowing from the Rock (Numbers 20:7-11)

Numbers 20:7-11. And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, Take the rod, and gather thou the assembly together, thou, and Aaron thy brother, and **speak ye unto the rock before their eyes; and it shall give forth his water,** and thou shalt bring forth to them water out of the rock: so thou shalt give the congregation and their beasts drink. And Moses took the rod from before the LORD, as he commanded him. And Moses and Aaron gathered the congregation together before the rock, and he said unto them, Hear now, ye rebels; must we fetch you water out of this rock? And Moses lifted up his hand, and with his rod he smote the rock twice: and the water came out abundantly, and the congregation drank, and their beasts *also*.

That Rock Was Christ

1 Corinthians 10:4. And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and **that Rock was Christ.**

Whosoever Drinketh of the Water That I Shall Give Him Shall Never Thirst

John 4:14. But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.

Jesus Christ is the Head of the Church.

Neither the Pope nor the Watchtower Society are the head of the Church.

Predicted.

Psalms 118:22. The stone *which* the builders refused is become the head *stone* of the corner.

Matthew 21:42. Jesus saith unto them, *Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?*

Appointed By God.

Ephesians 1:22. And hath put all *things* under his feet, and gave him *to be* the head over all *things* to the church,

Declared By Himself.

Matthew 21:42. Jesus saith unto them, *Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?*

As His Mystical Body.

Ephesians 4:12. For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

Ephesians 5:23. For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body.

Has Preeminence In All Things.

1 Corinthians 11:3. But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman *is* the man; and the head of Christ *is* God.

Ephesians 1:22. And hath put all *things* under his feet, and gave him *to be* the head over all *things* to the church,

Colossians 1:18. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all *things* he might have the preeminence.

Commissioned His Apostles.

Matthew 10:1. And when he had called unto *him* his twelve disciples, he gave them power *against* unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.

Matthew 28:19. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:

John 20:21. Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you: as *my* Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

Instituted The Ordinances.

Matthew 28:19. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:

Luke 22:19-20. And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake *it*, and gave unto them, saying, *This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.* Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, *This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.*

Imparts Gifts.

Psalms 68:18. Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive: thou hast received gifts for men; yea, *for* the rebellious also, that the LORD God might dwell *among them*.

Ephesians 4:8. Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

Saints Are Complete In.

Colossians 2:10. And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power:

Perversers of the Truth Do Not Hold.

Colossians 2:18-19. Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind, And not holding the Head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.

Jesus Christ is the Good Shepherd

Neither the Pope nor the Watchtower Society are the Good Shepherd.

As Jehovah, the Shepherd.

Isaiah 40:11. He shall feed his flock like a shepherd: he shall gather the lambs with his arm, and carry *them* in his bosom, *and* shall gently lead those that are with young.

Hebrews 13:20. Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant,

Foretold.

Genesis 49:24. But his bow abode in strength, and the arms of his hands were made strong by the hands of the mighty *God* of Jacob; (from thence *is* the shepherd, the stone of Israel:)

Isaiah 40:11. He shall feed his flock like a shepherd: he shall gather the lambs with his arm, and carry *them* in his bosom, *and* shall gently lead those that are with young.

Ezekiel 34:23. And I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, *even* my servant David; he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd.

Ezekiel 37:24. And David my servant *shall be* king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in my judgments, and observe my statutes, and do them.

The chief.

1 Peter 5:4. And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.

The good.

John 10:11. I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.

John 10:14. I am the good shepherd, and know my *sheep*, and am known of mine.

The great.

Micah 5:4. And he shall stand and feed in the strength of the LORD, in the majesty of the name of the LORD his God; and they shall abide: for now shall he be great unto the ends of the earth.

Hebrews 13:20. Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant,

HIS SHEEP.

He knows.

John 10:14. I am the good shepherd, and know my *sheep*, and am known of mine.

John 10:27. My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

He calls.

John 10:3. To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

He gathers.

Isaiah 40:11. He shall feed his flock like a shepherd: he shall gather the lambs with his arm, and carry *them* in his bosom, *and* shall gently lead those that are with young.

John 10:16. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, *and* one shepherd.

He guides.

Psalms 23:3. He restoreth my soul: he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake.

John 10:3-4. To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out. And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.

He feeds.

Psalms 23:1-2. The LORD *is* my shepherd; I shall not want. He maketh me to lie down in green pastures: he leadeth me beside the still waters.

He cherishes tenderly.

Isaiah 40:11. He shall feed his flock like a shepherd: he shall gather the lambs with his arm, and carry *them* in his bosom, *and* shall gently lead those that are with young.

He protects and preserves.

Jeremiah 31:10. Hear the word of the LORD, O ye nations, and declare *it* in the isles afar off, and say, He that scattered Israel will gather him, and keep him, as a shepherd *doth* his flock.

Ezekiel 34:10. Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I *am* against the shepherds; and I will require my flock at their hand, and cause them to cease from feeding the flock; neither shall the shepherds

feed themselves any more; for I will deliver my flock from their mouth, that they may not be meat for them.

Zechariah 9:16. And the LORD their God shall save them in that day as the flock of his people: for *they shall be as* the stones of a crown, lifted up as an ensign upon his land.

John 10:28. And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any *man* pluck them out of my hand.

He laid down His life for.

Zechariah 13:7. Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, and against the man *that is* my fellow, saith the LORD of hosts: smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered: and I will turn mine hand upon the little ones.

Matthew 26:31. Then saith Jesus unto them, *All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.*

John 10:11. *I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.*

John 10:15. *As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.*

He gives eternal life to.

John 10:28. And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any *man* pluck them out of my hand.

TYPIFIED.

David,

1 Samuel 16:11. And Samuel said unto Jesse, Are here all *thy* children? And he said, There remaineth yet the youngest, and, behold, he keepeth the sheep. And Samuel said unto Jesse, Send and fetch him: for we will not sit down till he come hither.

Jesus Christ is the High Priest Over the Church.

Neither the Pope nor the Watchtower Society are the High Priest.

Heb 10:21; Heb 2:17; Heb 3:1; Heb 4:14-15; Heb 5:1,5,10; Heb 6:20; Ps 110:4; Heb 5:6; Heb 7:15,17,24,26,28; Heb 8:1,3; Heb 9:7,11,25; Heb 10:21; Heb 13:11; Heb 3:1; Heb 5:4-5; Heb 7:11,16; Heb 8:1-2,6; Heb 7:20-21,23-25,28,26,28; Heb 3:2; Heb 7:27; Heb 9:14,26,13-14,23; Heb 7:27; Heb 9:25-26; Heb 2:17; Heb 9:12; Heb 4:14; Heb 10:12; Heb 9:24; Heb 2:18; Heb 4:15; Heb 7:25; Heb 9:24; Nu 6:23-26; Ac 3:26; Zec 6:13; Heb 4:14; Eph 2:13-18; Heb 9:15; Heb 12:24; 1Ti 2:5; Heb 8:6; Heb 12:24; De 5:5; Ga 3:19; Ge 14:18-20; Ex 40:12-15; Nu 16:48

“Having an High Priest Over the House of God” Hebrews 10:21.

To Make Reconciliation for the Sins of the People.

Hebrews 2:17. Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be **made like unto *his* brethren**, that he might be **a merciful and faithful high priest** in things *pertaining* to God, **to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.**

Consider The High Priest of Our Profession, Christ Jesus.

Hebrews 3:1. Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and **High Priest of our profession, Christ Jesus;**

A Great High Priest that is Passed into the Heavens.

Hebrews 4:14-15. Seeing then that **we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God**, let us hold fast *our* profession. For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but **was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.**

Offer Both Gifts and Sacrifices for Sins.

Hebrews 5:1. For every high priest taken from among men is ordained for men in things *pertaining* to God, that he may **offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins:**

Glorified Not Himself.

Hebrews 5:5. So also **Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest;** but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee.

After The Order of Melchizedek.

Hebrews 5:10. Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

Hebrews 6:20. Whither the forerunner is for us entered, *even Jesus*, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

Psalms 110:4. The LORD hath sworn, and will not repent, **Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchizedek.**

Hebrews 5:6. As he saith also in another place, **Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.**

Hebrews 7:15. And it is yet far more evident: for that **after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another priest,**

Hebrews 7:17. For he testifieth, **Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.**

Because He Continueth Ever.

Hebrews 7:24. But this *man*, **because he continueth ever, hath an unchangeable priesthood.**

Holy, Harmless, undefiled, Separate from Sinners.

Hebrews 7:26. For **such an high priest became us, *who is* holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens;**

Is Consecrated For Evermore.

Hebrews 7:28 For the law maketh men high priests which have infirmity; but the word of the oath, which was since the law, maketh **the Son, who is consecrated for evermore.**

Is Set On The Right Hand of the Throne.

Hebrews 8:1. Now of the things which we have spoken *this is* the sum: **We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne** of the Majesty in the heavens;

Ordained To Offer Gifts And Sacrifices.

Hebrews 8:3. For **every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices:** wherefore *it is* of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer.

Went, Not Without Blood.

Hebrews 9:7. But **into the second** *went* the high priest alone once every year, **not without blood**, which he offered for himself, and *for* the errors of the people:

In A Tabernacle, Not Made With Hands.

Hebrews 9:11. But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and **more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building;**

Nor Yet That He Should Offer Himself Often.

Hebrews 9:25. **Nor yet that he should offer himself often**, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others;

An High Priest Over The House Of God.

Hebrews 10:21. And ***having* an high priest over the house of God;**

The High Priest For Sin, Burned Without The Camp.

Hebrews 13:11. For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by **the high priest for sin, are burned without the camp.**

Appointed And Called By God.

Hebrews 3:1. Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our profession, Christ Jesus;

Hebrews 5:4-5. And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron. So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest; but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee.

Superior To Aaron And The Levitical Priests.

Hebrews 7:11. If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received the law,) what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron?

Hebrews 7:16. Who is made, not after the law of a carnal commandment, but after the power of an endless life.

Hebrews 8:1-2. Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man.

Hebrews 8:6. But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises.

Consecrated With An Oath.

Hebrews 7:20-21. And inasmuch as not without an oath he was made priest: (For those priests were made without an oath; but this with an oath by him that said unto him, The Lord sware and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec:)

Has An Unchangeable Priesthood.

Hebrews 7:23-25. And they truly were many priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death: But this *man*, because he continueth ever, **hath an unchangeable priesthood**. Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

Hebrews 7:28. For the law maketh men high priests which have infirmity; but the word of the oath, which was since the law, maketh the Son, who **is consecrated for evermore**.

Is Of Unblemished Purity.

Hebrews 7:26. For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens;

Hebrews 7:28. For the law maketh men high priests which have infirmity; but the word of the oath, which was since the law, maketh the Son, who is consecrated for evermore.

Faithful.

Hebrews 3:2. Who was faithful to him that appointed him, as also Moses was faithful in all his house.

Needed No Sacrifice For Himself.

Hebrews 7:27. Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.

Offered Himself A Sacrifice.

Hebrews 9:14. How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

Hebrews 9:26. For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.

His Sacrifice Superior to All Others.

Hebrews 9:13-14. For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

Hebrews 9:23. It was therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these; but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these.

Offered Sacrifice but Once.

Hebrews 7:27. Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.

Hebrews 9:25-26. Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.

Made Reconciliation.

Hebrews 2:17. Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.

Obtained Eternal Redemption For Us.

Hebrews 9:12. Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.

Entered Into Heaven.

Hebrews 4:14. Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession.

Hebrews 10:12. But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God;

To Appear in the Presence of God For Us

Hebrews 9:24. For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us:

Sympathizes With Those Who Are Tempted.

Hebrews 2:18. For in that he himself hath suffered being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

Hebrews 4:15. For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

Intercedes.

Hebrews 7:25. Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

Hebrews 9:24. For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us:

Blesses.

Numbers 6:23-26. Speak unto Aaron and unto his sons, saying, On this wise ye shall bless the children of Israel, saying unto them, The LORD bless thee, and keep thee: The LORD make his face shine upon thee, and be gracious unto thee: The LORD lift up his countenance upon thee, and give thee peace.

Acts 3:26. Unto you first God, having raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.

On His Throne.

Zechariah 6:13. Even he shall build the temple of the LORD; and he shall bear the glory, and shall sit and rule upon his throne; and he shall be a priest upon his throne: and the counsel of peace shall be between them both.

Appointment of and Encouragement to Steadfastness.

Hebrews 4:14. Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession.

In Virtue of His Atonement.

Ephesians 2:13-18. But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ. For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition *between us*; Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, *even* the law of commandments *contained* in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, so making peace; And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby: And came and preached peace to you which were afar off, and to them that were nigh. For through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father.

Hebrews 9:15. And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

Hebrews 12:24. And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.

The Only Mediator Between God and Man.

1 Timothy 2:5. For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;

of the Gospel Covenant.

Hebrews 8:6. But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises.

Hebrews 12:24. And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.

TYPIFIED.

Moses,

Deuteronomy 5:5. (I stood between the LORD and you at that time, to shew you the word of the LORD: for ye were afraid by reason of the fire, and went not up into the mount;) saying,

Galatians 3:19. Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.

Melchizedek.

Genesis 14:18-20. And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God. And he blessed him, and said, Blessed be Abram of the most high God, possessor of heaven and earth: And blessed be the most high God, which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he gave him tithes of all.

Aaron.

Exodus 40:12-15. And thou shalt bring Aaron and his sons unto the door of the tabernacle of the congregation, and wash them with water. And thou shalt put upon Aaron the holy garments, and anoint him, and sanctify him; that he may minister unto me in the priest's office. And thou shalt bring his sons, and clothe them with coats: And thou shalt anoint them, as thou didst anoint their father, that they may minister unto me in the priest's office: for their anointing shall surely be an everlasting priesthood throughout their generations.

Numbers 16:48 And he stood between the dead and the living; and the plague was stayed.

Jesus Christ is the Only Mediator Between God & Men.

Neither the Pope nor the Watchtower are mediators between God and men.

In virtue of His atonement.

Ephesians 2:13-18. But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ. For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us; Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, so making peace; And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby: ...

Hebrews 9:15. And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

Hebrews 12:24. And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.

The only One between God and man.

1 Timothy 2:5. For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;

Of the gospel covenant.

Hebrews 8:6. But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises.

Hebrews 12:24. And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.

TYPIFIED.

Moses,

Deuteronomy 5:5. (I stood between the LORD and you at that time, to shew you the word of the LORD: for ye were afraid by reason of the fire, and went not up into the mount;) saying,

Galatians 3:19. Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.

Aaron,

Numbers 16:48. And he stood between the dead and the living; and the plague was stayed.

Jesus Christ is the Prophet Foretold by Moses.

Neither the Pope nor the Watchtower is the prophet foretold by Moses.

Foretold.

Deuteronomy 18:15. The LORD thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken;

Deuteronomy 18:18. I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him.

Acts 3:22. For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

Acts 7:37. This is that Moses, which said unto the children of Israel, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear.

Deuteronomy 34:10. And there arose not a prophet since in Israel like unto Moses, whom the LORD knew face to face,

John the Baptist did not fulfill.

John 1:21. And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? And he answered, No.

Matthew 11:3. And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?

Jesus Fulfilled.

Matthew 21:11. And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

Luke 7:16. And there came a fear on all: and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us; and, That God hath visited his people.

Luke 24:19. And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people:

John 4:19. The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.

John 4:25. The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh, which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell us all things.

John 4:42. And said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

John 6:14. Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that prophet that should come into the world.

John 7:16. Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

John 12:49. For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.

Anointed with the Holy Ghost.

Isaiah 42:1. Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, in whom my soul delighteth; I have put my spirit upon him: he shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles.

Isaiah 61:1. The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound;

Luke 4:18. The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised,

John 3:34. For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him.

Alone knows and reveals God.

Matthew 11:27. All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him.

John 3:2. The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

John 3:13. And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.

John 17:6. I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.

John 17:14. I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

John 17:26. And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them.

Declared His doctrine to be that of the Father.

John 8:26. I have many things to say and to judge of you: but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him.

John 12:49. For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.

John 14:10. Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works.

John 15:15. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.

John 17:8. For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received *them*, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.

John 17:16. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

Preached the gospel, and worked miracles.

Matthew 4:23. And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people.

Matthew 11:5. The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them.

Luke 4:43. And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent.

Foretold things to come.

Matthew 24:3-35. And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world? And Jesus answered and said unto them, *Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. ...*

Luke 19:41. And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it,

Luke 19:44 And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

Faithful to His trust.

Luke 4:43. And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent.

John 17:8. For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received *them*, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.

Hebrews 3:2. Who was faithful to him that appointed him, as also Moses was faithful in all his house.

Revelation 1:5. And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,

Revelation 3:14. And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write; These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God;

Abounded in wisdom.

Luke 2:40. And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was upon him.

Luke 2:47. And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers.

Luke 2:52. And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man.

Mighty in deed and word.

Matthew 13:54. And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?

Mark 1:27. And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authority commandeth he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him.

Luke 4:32. And they were astonished at his doctrine: for his word was with power.

John 7:46. The officers answered, Never man spake like this man.

Meek and unostentatious in His teaching.

Isaiah 42:2. He shall not cry, nor lift up, nor cause his voice to be heard in the street.

Matthew 12:17-20. That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Behold my servant, whom I have chosen; my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not strive, nor cry; neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets. A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory.

God commands us to hear.

Deuteronomy 18:15. The LORD thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken;

Matthew 17:5. While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him.

Acts 3:22. For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

Acts 7:37. This is that Moses, which said unto the children of Israel, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear.

God will severely visit our neglect of.

Deuteronomy 18:19. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not hearken unto my words which he shall speak in my name, I will require it of him.

Acts 3:23. And it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.

Hebrews 2:3. How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him;

I have not spoken of myself

John 12:49-50. For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.

John 3:11. Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness.

John 3:32. And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth; and no man receiveth his testimony.

John 5:30. I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.

John 6:38-40. For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

John 8:26. I have many things to say and to judge of you: but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him.

John 8:42. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me.

John 14:10. Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works.

John 15:15. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you.

John 17:8. For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received *them*, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.

Revelation 1:1. The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified *it* by his angel unto his servant John:

Typified.

Moses,

Deuteronomy 18:15. The LORD thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken;

The Human Nature of Christ.

Matthew 1:1-17; Romans 1:3-4; Hebrews 4:15; 1 Timothy 2:5; Hebrews 2:17; Galatians 4:4-5; 1 Corinthians 15:21; Romans 6:15,19; Matthew 1:18; Luke 1:31; Matthew 1:16; 2:2; Luke 2:7,11; John 1:14; Hebrews 2:14; Matthew 26:38; Luke 23:46; Acts 2:31; Luke 2:21,52; 19:41; John 11:35; Matthew 4:2; 21:18; John 4:7; 19:28; Matthew 8:24; Mark 4:38; John 4:6; Isaiah 53:3-4; Matthew 26:67; Luke 22:64; 23:11; Matthew 27:26; John 19:1; Psalm 22:16; Luke 23:33; John 19:30,34; Matthew 27:59-60; Acts 3:15; 2 Timothy 2:8; Acts 3:22; Philippians 2:7-8; Hebrews 7:26,28; 1 John 3:5; 1 Peter 2:22; Hebrews 4:15; John 18:38; 8:46; Luke 24:39; John 20:27; 1 John 1:1-2; Genesis 3:15; Isaiah 7:14; Jeremiah 31:22; Luke 1:31; Galatians 4:4; Genesis 22:18; Galatians 3:16; Hebrews 2:16; 2 Samuel 7:12,16; Mark 10:47; Acts 2:30; 13:23; Romans 1:3; Matthew 8:20; 16:13; John 4:2; Mark 6:3; John 7:27; 19:5; Acts 2:22; 1 John 4:3; 2 John 7

Born of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Judah, and King David.

Matthew 1:1-17. The book of the generation of **Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham. Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judas** and his brethren; And Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar; and Phares begat Esrom; and Esrom begat Aram; And Aram begat Aminadab; and Aminadab begat Naasson; and Naasson begat Salmon; And Salmon begat Booz of **Rachab**; and Booz begat Obed of **Ruth**; and Obed begat Jesse; And Jesse begat **David the king...**

Romans 1:3-4. Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was **made of the seed of David according to the flesh**; And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead:

Was In All Points Tempted Like as we are, Yet Without Sin

Hebrews 4:15. For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as *we are*, yet without sin.

Was Necessary to His Mediatorial Office.

1 Timothy 2:5. For *there is* one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;

Hebrews 2:17. Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto *his* brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things *pertaining* to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.

Galatians 4:4-5. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

1 Corinthians 15:21. For since by man *came* death, by man *came* also the resurrection of the dead.

Romans 6:15. What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

Romans 6:19. I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.

IS PROVED BY HIS.

Conception in the Virgin's womb.

Matthew 1:18. Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost.

Luke 1:31. And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS.

Matthew 1:16. And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

Matthew 2:2. Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

Luke 2:7. And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn.

Luke 2:11. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

Partaking of flesh and blood.

John 1:14. And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

Hebrews 2:14. Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil;

Having A Human Soul.

Matthew 26:38. Then saith he unto them, **My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me.**

Luke 23:46. And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, **Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit:** and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.

Acts 2:31. He seeing this before spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption.

Circumcision.

Luke 2:21. And when eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the child, his name was called JESUS, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

Increase in wisdom and stature.

Luke 2:52. And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man.

Weeping.

Luke 19:41. And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it,

John 11:35. Jesus wept.

Hungering.

Matthew 4:2. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred.

Matthew 21:18. Now in the morning as he returned into the city, he hungered.

Thirsting.

John 4:7. There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, **Give me to drink.**

John 19:28. After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, **I thirst.**

Sleeping.

Matthew 8:24. And, behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep.

Mark 4:38. And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow: and they awake him, and say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?

Being subject to weariness.

John 4:6. Now Jacob's well was there. Jesus therefore, being wearied with *his* journey, sat thus on the well: *and* it was about the sixth hour.

Being a man of sorrows.

Isaiah 53:3-4. He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were *our* faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted.

Being buffeted.

Matthew 26:67. Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him; and others smote *him* with the palms of their hands,

Luke 22:64. And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecy, who is it that smote thee?

Enduring indignities.

Luke 23:11. And Herod with his men of war set him at nought, and mocked *him*, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

Being scourged.

Matthew 27:26. Then released he Barabbas unto them: and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered *him* to be crucified.

John 19:1 Then Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged *him*.

Being nailed to the cross.

Psalms 22:16. For dogs have compassed me: the assembly of the wicked have inclosed me: they pierced my hands and my feet.

Luke 23:33. And when they were come to the place, which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on the right hand, and the other on the left.

Death.

John 19:30. When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, **It is finished:** and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

Side being pierced.

John 19:34. But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

Burial.

Matthew 27:59-60. And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

Resurrection.

Acts 3:15. And killed the Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses.

2 Timothy 2:8. Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David was raised from the dead according to my gospel:

Was like our own in all things except sin.

Acts 3:22. For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

Philippians 2:7-8. But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

Was without sin.

Hebrews 7:26. For such an high priest became us, *who is* holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens;

Hebrews 7:28. For the law maketh men high priests which have infirmity; but the word of the oath, which was since the law, *maketh* the Son, who is consecrated for evermore.

1 John 3:5. And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin.

1 Peter 2:22. Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth:

Hebrews 4:15. For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as *we are*, yet without sin.

John 18:38. Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I find in him no fault *at all*.

John 8:46. Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?

Was submitted to the evidence of the senses.

Luke 24:39. Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

John 20:27. Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust *it* into my side: and be not faithless, but believing.

1 John 1:1-2. That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the Word of life; (For the life was manifested, and we have seen *it*, and bear witness, and shew unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us;)

WAS OF THE SEED OF:

The woman.

Genesis 3:15. And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.

Isaiah 7:14. Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel.

Jeremiah 31:22. How long wilt thou go about, O thou backsliding daughter? for the LORD hath created a new thing in the earth, A woman shall compass a man.

Luke 1:31. And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS.

Galatians 4:4. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law,

Abraham.

Genesis 22:18. And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice.

Galatians 3:16. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.

Hebrews 2:16. For verily he took not on *him* the nature of angels; but he took on *him* the seed of Abraham.

David.

2 Samuel 7:12. And when thy days be fulfilled, and thou shalt sleep with thy fathers, I will set up thy seed after thee, which shall proceed out of thy bowels, and I will establish his kingdom.

2 Samuel 7:16. And thine house and thy kingdom shall be established for ever before thee: thy throne shall be established for ever.

Mark 10:47. And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus, *thou* Son of David, have mercy on me.

Acts 2:30. Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne;

Acts 13:23. Of this man's seed hath God according to *his* promise raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus:

Romans 1:3. Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh;

Attested by Himself.

Matthew 8:20. And Jesus saith unto him, *The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.*

Matthew 16:13. When Jesus came into the coasts of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, *Whom do men say that I the Son of man am?*

Confession of, a test of belonging to God.

John 4:2. (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,)

Acknowledged by men.

Mark 6:3. Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

John 7:27. Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

John 19:5. Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And *Pilate* saith unto them, Behold the man!

Acts 2:22. Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know:

Denied by Antichrist.

1 John 4:3. And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that *spirit* of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.

2 John 7. For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.

The Angel of the LORD

The LORD (Jehovah God) appeared as a man unto Abraham

Genesis 18:1-2 ¶ And the LORD appeared unto him in the plains of Mamre: and he sat in the tent door in the heat of the day; And he lift up his eyes and looked, and, lo, **three men stood by him**: and when he saw *them*, he ran to meet them from the tent door, and **bowed himself toward the ground**,

Genesis 18:13 And **the LORD said unto Abraham**, Wherefore did Sarah laugh, saying, Shall I of a surety bear a child, which am old?

Genesis 18:16-17 ¶ And the men rose up from thence, and looked toward Sodom: and Abraham went with them to bring them on the way. And **the LORD said, Shall I hide from Abraham that thing which I do**;

Genesis 18:22 And the men turned their faces from thence, and went toward Sodom: but **Abraham stood yet before the LORD**.

Jacob wrestled with a man, the LORD God of hosts

Genesis 31:11-13 And the angel of God spake unto me in a dream, *saying*, Jacob: And I said, Here *am* I. And he said, Lift up now thine eyes, and see, all the rams which leap upon the cattle *are* ringstraked, speckled, and grisled: for I have seen all that Laban doeth unto thee. I *am* the God of Beth-el, where thou anointedst the pillar, *and* where thou vowedst a vow unto me: now arise, get thee out from this land, and return unto the land of thy kindred.

Hosea 12:3-5 He took his brother by the heel in the womb, and by his strength he had power with God: Yea, **he had power over the angel, and prevailed**: he wept, and made supplication unto him: **he found him *in* Beth-el, and there he spake with us; Even the LORD God of hosts**; the LORD *is* his memorial.

Genesis 32:24-30 ¶ And Jacob was left alone; and **there wrestled a man with him until the breaking of the day**. And when he saw that he prevailed not against him, he touched the hollow of his thigh; and the hollow of Jacob's thigh was out of joint, as he wrestled with him. And he said, Let me go, for the day breaketh. And he said, I will not let thee go, except thou bless me. And he said unto him, What *is* thy name? And he said, Jacob. And he said, **Thy name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel: for as a prince hast thou power with God and with men, and hast prevailed**. And Jacob asked *him*, and said, Tell *me*, I pray thee, thy name. And he said, Wherefore *is* it *that* thou dost ask after my name? And he blessed him there. And Jacob called the name of the place Peniel: **for I have seen God face to face, and my life is preserved**.

God appeared as the angel of the LORD unto Moses

Exodus 3:2-6 And **the angel of the LORD appeared unto him in a flame of fire out of the midst of a bush**: and he looked, and, behold, the bush burned with fire, and the bush *was* not consumed. And Moses said, I will now turn aside, and see this great sight, why the bush is not burnt. And when the LORD saw that he turned aside to see, **God called unto him out of the midst of the bush**, and said, Moses, Moses. And he said, Here *am* I. And he said, Draw not nigh hither: **put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground**. Moreover he said, **I am the God of thy father, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob**. And Moses hid his face; for **he was afraid to look upon God**.

The captain of the host of the LORD appeared unto Joshua

Joshua 5:13-15 ¶ And it came to pass, when Joshua was by Jericho, that he lifted up his eyes and looked, and, behold, there stood a man over against him with his sword drawn in his hand: and Joshua went unto him, and said unto him, *Art* thou for us, or for our adversaries? And he said, Nay; but **as captain of the host of the LORD am I now come**. And **Joshua fell on his face to the earth, and did worship**, and said unto him, What saith my lord unto his servant? And the captain of the LORD'S host said unto Joshua, **Loose thy shoe from off thy foot; for the place whereon thou standest is holy**. And Joshua did so.

Worshiping of angels, forbidden

Colossians 2:18 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and **worshipping of angels**, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind,

Revelation 19:10 And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, **See thou do it not: I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren** that have the testimony of Jesus: **worship God**: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

Revelation 22:8-9 And I John saw these things, and heard *them*. And when I had heard and seen, **I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel** which shewed me these things. *Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren* the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: **worship God**.

Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve

Matthew 4:9-10 And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. Then saith Jesus unto him, **Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.**

Michael the Archangel, “Your Prince.”

. Christ is not a created angel. Christ has existed from everlasting to everlasting. Christ is eternal. **A Prince is the Son and heir to the Throne.**

Michael, your prince.

Daniel 10:21 But I will shew thee that which is noted in the scripture of truth: and *there is* none that holdeth with me in these things, but **Michael your prince.**

Daniel 12:1 And at that time shall **Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people:** and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation *even* to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book.

Messiah the Prince.

Daniel 9:25 Know therefore and understand, *that* from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the **Messiah the Prince** *shall be* seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times.

I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.

Luke 10:18 And he said unto them, **I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.**

Revelation 12:7-9 And there was war in heaven: **Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels,** And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And **the great dragon was cast out,** that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: **he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.**

The Christ was first called Jesus at His Birth.

Matthew 1:21 And **she shall bring forth a son**, and ***thou shalt call his name JESUS***: for he shall save his people from their sins.

Micah 5:2 But thou, Beth-lehem Ephratah, *though* thou be little among the thousands of Judah, **yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel**; whose goings forth *have been* from of old, from everlasting.

Christ is going to receive a name name.

Revelation 3:12 Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, *which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.*

The Prince of princes.

Daniel 8:25 And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand; and he shall magnify *himself* in his heart, and by peace shall destroy many: he shall also stand up against **the Prince of princes**; but he shall be broken without hand.

1 Timothy 6:15 Which in his times he shall shew, *who is* the blessed and **only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords**;

Revelation 17:14 ¶ These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is **Lord of lords, and King of kings**: and they that are with him *are* called, and chosen, and faithful.

Revelation 19:16 And he hath on *his* vesture and on his thigh a name written, **KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS**.

A prince is the son of a king and heir to His throne. Jesus is the Son of God whom God anointed as His Christ, and appointed as the eternal heir of the throne of God.

Daniel 8:25 is written before the birth of Jesus, who was called "The Prince of princes." 1 Timothy and Revelation were written after Christ's ascension. Jesus is now seated on the throne of God, and after his ascension, he is called King of kings.

The Prince of Peace

Isaiah 9:6 For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, **The Prince of Peace**.

Acts 3:15 And killed **the Prince of life**, whom God hath raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses.

Acts 5:29-31 Then Peter and the *other* apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men. The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree. **Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour**, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

John 3:16 For God so loved the world, that **he gave his only begotten Son**, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

Thou art my Son, Thy throne, O God.

Hebrews 1:5-8 For unto which of the angels said he at any time, **Thou art my Son**, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? And again, when he bringeth in the firstbegotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him. And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire. But **unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever**: a sceptre of righteousness *is* the sceptre of thy kingdom.

Isaiah 9:6-7 For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, **The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace**. **Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom**, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.

Moses's Resurrection by Michael the Archangel.

Moses the servant of the LORD died

Deuteronomy 34:5-6 ¶ So Moses the servant of the LORD died there in the land of Moab, according to the word of the LORD. And he buried him in a valley in the land of Moab, over against Beth-peor: but no man knoweth of his sepulchre unto this day.

Michael contended about the body of Moses

Jude 9 Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee.

There appeared unto them Moses.

Matthew 17:1-3 ¶ And after six days Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart, And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light. And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

The voice of the archangel raises the dead.

1 Thessalonians 4:16 For **the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel**, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first:

The LORD (Jehovah God) shall roar from on high.

Jeremiah 25:30 ¶ Therefore prophesy thou against them all these words, and say unto them, **The LORD shall roar from on high, and utter his voice from his holy habitation; he shall mightily roar upon his habitation; he shall give a shout**, as they that tread *the grapes*, against all the inhabitants of the earth.

Jesus said, “I am the resurrection”

John 11:25 Jesus said unto her, **I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live:**

Created Angels are not to be Worshiped.

Colossians 2:18 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind,

Don't Worship Angels—Worship God.

Revelation 19:10 And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, **See *thou do it not: I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren*** that have the testimony of Jesus: **worship God**: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

Revelation 22:8-9 And I John saw these things, and heard *them*. And when I had heard and seen, **I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel** which shewed me these things. Then saith he unto me, **See *thou do it not: for I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren the prophets***, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: **worship God**.

Created by God and Christ.

Nehemiah 9:6. Thou, even thou, Art LORD alone; thou hast made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and thou preservest them all; and the host of heaven worshippeth thee.

Colossians 1:16. For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him:

Worship God and Christ.

Nehemiah 9:6. Thou, even thou, Art LORD alone; thou hast made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and thou preservest them all; and the host of heaven worshippeth thee.

Philippians 2:9-11. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should Confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

Hebrews 1:6. And again, when he bringeth in the firstbegotten into the world, he saith, And let all the Angels of God worship him.

Jesus Christ is the Son of God.

Mark 1:1. The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God;

John 20:31. But these are written, **that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God;** and that believing ye might have life through his name.

“Some believed the things which were spoken, and some believed not.”
Acts 28:23-28.

God Declared, “This is My Beloved Son”

Matthew 3:17. And lo a voice from heaven, saying, **this is my beloved Son**, in whom I am well pleased.

Matthew 17:5. While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, **this is my beloved Son**, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him.

John 1:18. No man hath seen God at any time; **the only begotten Son**, which is in the bosom of the Father, **He hath declared Him.**

Hebrews 1:5. For unto which of the angels said he at any time, thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? and again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?

Hebrews 1:8. But unto the Son *he saith*, thy throne, o God, *is* for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness *is* the sceptre of thy kingdom.

Believers Must Confess Jesus Christ Before Men

Matthew 10:32. Whosoever therefore shall **confess me before men**, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven.

Luke 12:8. Also I say unto you, **Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God:**

Romans 1:3-4. Concerning **his Son Jesus Christ our Lord**, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh; And **declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead:**

1 John 4:2. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: **Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God:**

1 Corinthians 12:3 Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and *that* **no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost.**

Romans 10:9-10. That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt *believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead*, **thou shalt be saved.** For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and **with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.**

Romans 14:11. For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and **every tongue shall confess to God.**

Philippians 2:11. And *that* **every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord**, to the glory of God the Father.

1 John 4:15. Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

Confess, “Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God”

Matthew 16:13-20. When Jesus came into the coasts of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, **Whom do men say that I the Son of man am?** And they said, Some say *that thou art* John the Baptist: some, Elias; and others, Jeremias, or one of the prophets. He saith unto them, **But whom say ye that I am?** And Simon Peter answered and said, **Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.** And Jesus answered and said unto him, **Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.** And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and **upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.** And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that **he was Jesus the Christ.**

Examples Of Saved People Confessing Christ

Matthew 14:33. Then they that were in the ship came and worshipped him, saying, **Of a truth thou art the Son of God.**

Matthew 16:16. And Simon Peter answered and said, **Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.**

Matthew 27:54. Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, **Truly this was the Son of God.**

Mark 8:29. And he saith unto them, **But whom say ye that I am?** And Peter answereth and saith unto him, **Thou art the Christ.**

Mark 15:39. And when the centurion, which stood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said, **Truly this man was the Son of God.**

John 1:34. And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God.

John 1:49. Nathanael answered and saith unto him, **Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel.**

John 6:69. And we believe and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God.

John 9:35-38. Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, **Dost thou believe on the Son of God?** He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, **Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.** And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

John 11:27. She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: **I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God,** which should come into the world

John 20:28-29. And Thomas answered and said unto him, **My Lord and my God.** Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: **blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.**

Acts 8:37 And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, **I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.**

Acts 9:19-22. And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain days with the disciples which were at Damascus. And straightway **he preached Christ in the synagogues, that he is the Son of God.** But all that heard *him* were amazed, and said; Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this name in Jerusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound unto the chief priests? But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damascus, **proving that this is very Christ.**

Jesus Made a Good Confession Before Caiaphas

Matthew 26:63-64. But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God. Jesus saith unto him, **Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.**

Jesus Quoted the Prophecy of “the Son of Man”

Daniel 7:13-14. I saw in the night visions, and, behold, **one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven**, and came to the Ancient of days, and *they brought him near before him*. And **there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom**, that *all people, nations, and languages, should serve him*: **his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.**

Jesus Witnessed a Good Confession Before Pontius Pilate

John 18:33-36. Then Pilate entered into the judgment hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him, **Art thou the King of the Jews?** Jesus answered him, **Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of me?** Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? **Thine own nation** and the chief priests have delivered thee unto me: what hast thou done? Jesus answered, **My kingdom is not of this world:** if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.

1 Timothy 6:12-13. Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and **hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.** I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and *before* **Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession.**

2 Timothy 1:8. **Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord**, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God;

The Martyrs of Jesus Died Making a Good Confession

Revelation 12:11. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and **by the word of their testimony**; and they loved not their lives unto the death.

1 John 5:5. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

1 John 5:20. And we know that **THE SON OF GOD IS COME**, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even **IN HIS SON JESUS CHRIST.** This is the true God, and eternal life.

Caiaphas, and the Chief Priests Denied Jesus Was King

Matthew 26:63-65. But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God. Jesus saith unto him, *Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.* **Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy.**

John 19:15. But they cried out, Away with *him*, away with *him*, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, **We have no king but Caesar.**

John 19:21. Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, **Write not, The King of the Jews; but that he said, I am King of the Jews.**

The Pharisees and Crowds Denied Jesus Christ was King

Matthew 9:3. And, behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, **This man blasphemeth.**

Luke 5:21. And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, **Who is this which speaketh blasphemies?** Who can forgive sins, but God alone?

John 10:33. The Jews answered him, saying, **For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy;** and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.

John 10:36. Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, **Thou blasphemest;** because I said, I am the Son of God?

John 18:40. Then cried they all again, saying, **Not this man, but Barabbas.** Now Barabbas was a robber.

Acts 3:13-14. The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the **God of our fathers, hath glorified his Son Jesus; whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate,** when he was determined to let *him* go. But ye denied the Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you;

He That Denieth That Jesus is the Christ is Antichrist

Luke 12:9. But **he that denieth me before men shall be denied before the angels of God.**

1 John 2:22-23. Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son. **Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: but he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also.**

1 John 4:3. And **every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God:** and this is that *spirit* of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.

Jesus Will Deny Those Guilty of Denying Him.

Matthew 10:33. But **whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.**

2 Timothy 2:12. If we suffer, we shall also reign with *him*: **if we deny him, he also will deny us:**

Denying Jesus Leads To Swift Destruction.

2 Peter 2:1. But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even **denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.**

Jude 4. For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and **denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.**

Jude 15. **To execute judgment upon all,** and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard *speeches* which **ungodly sinners have spoken against him.**

He That Believeth Not the Son Shall Not See Life

John 3:18. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but **he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.**

John 3:36. He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and **he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.**

Repent And Believe the Gospel Of Jesus Christ

Matthew 21:32. For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but **the publicans and the harlots believed him:** and ye, when ye had seen *it*, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.

3000 Unbelievers Hear the Gospel, Repent, and Believe

Acts 2:37-41. Now when they heard *this*, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men *and* brethren, what shall we do? Then Peter said unto them, **Repent,**

and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, *even* as many as the Lord our God shall call. And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying, Save yourselves from this untoward generation. **Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls.**

Whosoever Believeth That Jesus Is Christ Is Born of God

1 John 5:1. Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat loveth him also that is begotten of him.

God Promised to Give a New Heart

Ezekiel 36:26. A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.

2 Corinthians 5:17. Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

Ask God to Change Your Stony Heart of Unbelief

Romans 10:9-13. That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, **and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead,** thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. For the scripture saith, **Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.** For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.

After That Ye Believed, Ye Were Sealed

Ephesians 1:13. In whom ye also *trusted*, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also **after that ye believed, ye were sealed** with that holy Spirit of promise,

Will Power is not able to make this Change.

John 1:12-13. But as many as **received him,** to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that **believe on his name:** Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, **but of God.**

God Is the Only One That Can Give the New Birth.

John 3:3. Jesus answered and said unto him, *Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.*

John 3:5-6. Jesus answered, *Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.*

John 6:44-45. *No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.*

Ask – Receive, Seek – Find, Knock – It Will Be Opened.

ASK GOD TO CHANGE YOUR MIND, TO GIVE YOU A NEW HEART, TO CAUSE YOU TO BELIEVE ALL THAT THIS BOOKLET HAS REVEALED TO YOU ABOUT JESUS CHRIST.

Matthew 7:7-8. *Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.*

John 14:13-14. *And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it.*

Create In Me A Clean Heart, O God.

Psalms 51:1-13. *Have mercy upon me, O God, according to thy lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions. Wash me thoroughly from mine iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin. For I acknowledge my transgressions: and my sin is ever before me. Against thee, thee only, have I sinned, and done this evil in thy sight: that thou mightest be justified when thou speakest, and be clear when thou judgest. Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me. Behold, thou desirest truth in the inward parts: and in the hidden part thou shalt make me to know wisdom. Purge me with hyssop, and I shall be clean: wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow. Make me to hear joy and gladness; that the bones which thou hast broken may rejoice. Hide thy face from my sins, and blot out all mine iniquities. Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me. Cast me not away from thy presence; and take not thy holy spirit from me. Restore unto me the joy of thy salvation; and uphold me with thy free spirit. Then will I teach transgressors thy ways; and sinners shall be converted unto thee.*

The Death of Christ.

Foretold.

Isaiah 53:8. He was taken from prison and from Judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken.

Daniel 9:26. And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.

Zechariah 13:7. Awake, O sword, against my shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow, saith the LORD of hosts: smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered: and I will turn mine hand upon the little ones.

Appointed By God.

Isaiah 53:6. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.

Isaiah 53:10. Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for Sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand.

Necessary For The Redemption Of Man.

Luke 24:46. And said unto them, **Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:**

Acts 17:3. Opening and alleging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the Dead; and that this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ.

Acceptable, As A Sacrifice To God.

Matthew 20:28. **Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.**

Ephesians 5:2. And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour.

1 Thessalonians 5:10. Who died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him.

Was Voluntary.

Isaiah 53:12. Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto Death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the Sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.

Matthew 26:53. Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels?

John 10:17-18. Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.

Was Undeserved.

Isaiah 53:9. And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his Death; because he had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth.

MODE OF

Foretold By Christ.

Matthew 20:18-19. Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death, And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify *him*: and the third day he shall rise again.

Prefigured.

Numbers 21:8. And the LORD said unto Moses, Make thee a fiery serpent, and set it upon a pole: and it shall come to pass, that every one that is bitten, when he looketh upon it, shall live.

John 3:14. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up:

Ignominious.

Hebrews 12:2. Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our Faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

Accursed.

Galatians 3:13. Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of The Law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree:

Exhibited His Humility.

Philippians 2:8. And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto Death, even the Death of the cross.

A Stumbling Block To Jews.

1 Corinthians 1:23. But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumblingblock, and unto the Greeks foolishness;

Foolishness To Gentiles.

1 Corinthians 1:18. For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God.

1 Corinthians 1:23. But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumblingblock, and unto the Greeks foolishness;

Demanded By The Jews.

Matthew 27:22-23. Pilate saith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus which is called Christ? They all say unto him, Let him be crucified. And the governor said, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

Inflicted By The Gentiles.

Matthew 27:26-35. Then released he Barabbas unto them: and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered him to be crucified. Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of soldiers. And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe. And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews! ...

In The Company Of Malefactors.

Isaiah 53:12. Therefore will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto Death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the Sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.

Matthew 27:38. Then were there two Thieves crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

Accompanied By Preternatural Signs.

Matthew 27:45. Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour.

Matthew 27:51-53. And, behold, The Veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent; And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the Saints which slept arose, And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

Emblematical of the Death Unto Sin.

Romans 6:3-8. Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his Death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into Death: that like as Christ was raised up from the Dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his Death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of Sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve Sin. ...

Galatians 2:20. I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the Faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

Commemorated In The Sacrament of the Lord's Supper.

Luke 22:19-20. And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake *it*, and gave unto them, saying, **This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.** Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, **This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.**

1 Corinthians 11:26-29. For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's Death till he come. Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body.

The Resurrection of Jesus Christ.

Foretold by the prophets.

Psalms 16:10. For thou wilt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption.

Acts 13:34-35. And as concerning that he raised him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, he said on this wise, I will give you the sure mercies of David. Wherefore he saith also in another psalm, Thou shalt not suffer thine Holy One to see corruption.

Foretold by Himself.

Matthew 20:19. And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify him: and the third day he shall rise again.

Mark 9:9. And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen from the dead.

Mark 14:28. But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

John 2:19-22. Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days? But he spake of the temple of his body. When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

WAS NECESSARY TO

The fulfillment of Scripture.

Luke 24:45-46. Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures, And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:

Forgiveness of sins.

1 Corinthians 15:17. And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins.

Justification.

Romans 4:25. Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.

Romans 8:34. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

Hope.

1 Corinthians 15:19. If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.

The efficacy of preaching.

1 Corinthians 15:14. And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.

The efficacy of faith.

1 Corinthians 15:14. And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.

1 Corinthians 15:17. And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins.

A proof of His being the Son of God.

Psalms 2:7. I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee.

Acts 13:33. God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that he hath raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee.

Romans 1:4. And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead:

EFFECTED BY

The power of God.

Acts 2:24. Whom God hath raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.

Acts 3:15. And killed the Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses.

Romans 8:11. But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

Ephesians 1:20. Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places,

Colossians 2:12. Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

His own power.

John 2:19. Jesus answered and said unto them, **Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.**

John 10:18. **No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.**

The power of the Holy Ghost.

1 Peter 3:18. For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:

On the first day of the week.

Mark 16:9. Now when Jesus was risen early the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils.

On the third day after His death.

Luke 24:46. And said unto them, **Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:**

Acts 10:40. Him God raised up the third day, and shewed him openly;

1 Corinthians 15:4. And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:

THE APOSTLES

At first did not understand the predictions respecting.

Mark 9:10. And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.

John 20:9. For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.

Very slow to believe.

Mark 16:13. And they went and told it unto the residue: neither believed they them.

Luke 24:9. And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.

Luke 24:11. And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

Luke 24:37-38. But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit. And he said unto them, **Why are ye troubled? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?**

Reproved for their unbelief of.

Mark 16:14. Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.

HE APPEARED AFTER TO

Mary Magdalene.

Mark 16:9. Now when Jesus was risen early the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils.

John 20:18. Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her.

The women.

Matthew 28:9. And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, **All hail.** And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

Simon Peter.

Luke 24:34. Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

Two disciples.

Luke 24:13-31. And, behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem *about* threescore furlongs. And they talked together of all these things which had happened. And it came to pass, that, while they communed *together* and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them. But their eyes were holden that they should not know him. And he said unto them, **What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad?** And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days? And he said unto them, **What things?** And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people: And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him. But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done. Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre; And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive. And certain of them which were with us went to the sepulchre, and found *it* even so as the women had said: but him they saw not. Then he said unto them, **O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken: Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?** And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight.

Apostles, except Thomas.

John 20:19. Then the same day at evening, being the first *day* of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, **Peace be unto you.**

John 20:24. But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came.

Apostles, Thomas being present.

John 20:26. And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: *then* came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, **Peace be unto you.**

Apostles at the sea of Tiberias.

John 21:1. After these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise shewed he himself.

Apostles in Galilee.

Matthew 28:16-17. Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them. And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

Above five hundred brethren.

1 Corinthians 15:6. After that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.

James.

1 Corinthians 15:7. After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles.

All the Apostles.

Luke 24:51. And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

Acts 1:9. And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight.

1 Corinthians 15:7. After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles.

Paul.

1 Corinthians 15:8. And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time.

Fraud impossible in.

Matthew 27:63-66. Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again. Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first. Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make it as sure as ye can. So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

He gave many infallible proofs of.

Luke 24:35. And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

Luke 24:39. Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

Luke 24:43. And he took it, and did eat before them.

WAS ATTESTED BY

Angels.

Matthew 28:5-7. And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified. He is not here: for he is risen, as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay. And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead; and, behold, he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him: lo, I have told you.

Luke 24:4-7. And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments: And as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead? He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee, Saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.

Luke 24:23. And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive.

Apostles.

Acts 1:22. Beginning from the baptism of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us of his resurrection.

Acts 2:32. This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses.

Acts 3:15. And killed the Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses.

Acts 4:33. And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all.

His enemies.

Matthew 28:11-15. Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done. And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept. And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you. So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

Asserted and preached by the Apostles.

Acts 25:19. But had certain questions against him of their own superstition, and of one Jesus, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.

Acts 26:23. That Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

SAINTS

Begotten to a lively hope.

1 Peter 1:3. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,

1 Peter 1:21. Who by him do believe in God, that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory; that your faith and hope might be in God.

Desire to know the power of.

Philippians 3:10. That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death;

Should keep, in remembrance.

2 Timothy 2:8. Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David was raised from the dead according to my gospel:

Shall rise in the likeness of.

Romans 6:5. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection:

1 Corinthians 15:49. And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

Philippians 3:21. Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

Is an emblem of the new birth.

Romans 6:4. Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

Colossians 2:12. Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

The first-fruits of our resurrection.

Acts 26:23. That Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

1 Corinthians 15:20. But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the firstfruits of them that slept.

1 Corinthians 15:23. But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming.

The truth of the gospel involved in.

1 Corinthians 15:14-15. And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain. Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God; because we have testified of God that he raised up Christ: whom he raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not.

Followed by His exaltation.

Acts 4:10-11. Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole. This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

An assurance of the judgment.

Acts 17:31. Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

Typified.

Isaac,

Genesis 22:13. And Abraham lifted up his eyes, and looked, and behold behind him a ram caught in a thicket by his horns: and Abraham went and took the ram, and offered him up for a burnt offering in the stead of his son. Hebrews 11:19 Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure.

Jonah,

Jonah 2:10. And the LORD spake unto the fish, and it vomited out Jonah upon the dry land.

Matthew 12:40. For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

The Ascension of Jesus Christ.

Prophecies respecting.

Psalms 24:7. Lift up your heads, O ye gates; and be ye lift up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in.

Psalms 68:18. Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive: thou hast received gifts for men; yea, *for* the rebellious also, that the LORD God might dwell *among them*.

Ephesians 4:7-8. But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ. Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

Foretold by himself.

John 6:62. *What and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before?*

John 7:33. Then said Jesus unto them, *Yet a little while am I with you, and then I go unto him that sent me.*

John 14:28. *Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I.*

John 16:5. *But now I go my way to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?*

John 20:17. Jesus saith unto her, *Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God.*

Forty days after His resurrection.

Acts 1:3. To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God:

Described.

Acts 1:9. And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight.

From Mount Olivet.

Luke 24:50. And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them.

Mark 11:1. And when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples,

Acts 1:12. Then returned they unto Jerusalem from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath day's journey.

While blessing his disciples.

Luke 24:50. And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them.

When he had atoned for sin.

Hebrews 9:12. Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption *for us*.

Hebrews 10:12. But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God;

Was triumphant.

Psalms 68:18. Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive: thou hast received gifts for men; yea, *for* the rebellious also, that the LORD God might dwell *among them*.

Was to supreme power and dignity.

Luke 24:26 Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?

Ephesians 1:20-21. Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set *him* at his own right hand in the heavenly *places*, Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come:

1 Peter 3:22. Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject unto him.

As the Forerunner of His people.

Hebrews 6:20. Whither the forerunner is for us entered, *even* Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

To intercede.

Romans 8:34. Who *is* he that condemneth? *It is* Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

Hebrews 9:24. For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, *which are* the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us:

To send the Holy Ghost.

John 16:7. Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

Acts 2:33. Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear.

To receive gifts for men.

Psalms 68:18. Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive: thou hast received gifts for men; yea, *for* the rebellious also, that the LORD God might dwell *among them*.

Ephesians 4:8. Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

Ephesians 4:11. And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;

To prepare a place for his people.

John 14:2. In my Father's house are many mansions: if *it were* not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.

His second coming shall be in like manner as.

Acts 1:10-11. And while they looked stedfastly toward heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel; Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.

Typified.

Leviticus 16:15. Then shall he kill the goat of the sin offering, that *is* for the people, and bring his blood within the vail, and do with that blood as he did with the blood of the bullock, and sprinkle it

upon the mercy seat, and before the mercy seat:ntered, *even* Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

Hebrews 9:7. But into the second *went* the high priest alone once every year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and *for* the errors of the people:

Hebrews 9:9. Which *was* a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience;

Hebrews 9:12. Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption *for us*.

The Judgment Seat of Christ.

We Must All Appear Before

To Every Man According To His Work

Psalms 62:12. Also unto thee, O Lord, belongeth mercy: for thou renderest to every man according to his work.

Job 34:11. For the work of a man shall he render unto him, and cause every man to find according to his ways.

Proverbs 24:12. If thou sayest, Behold, we knew it not; doth not he that pondereth the heart consider it? and he that keepeth thy soul, doth not he know it? and shall not he render to every man according to his works?

Jeremiah 32:19. Great in counsel, and mighty in work: for thine eyes are open upon all the ways of the sons of men: to give every one according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings:

Ezekiel 7:27. The king shall mourn, and the prince shall be clothed with desolation, and the hands of the people of the land shall be troubled: I will do unto them after their way, and according to their deserts will I judge them; and they shall know that I am the LORD.

Ezekiel 18:30. Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways, saith the Lord GOD. Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin.

Ezekiel 33:20. Yet ye say, The way of the Lord is not equal. O ye house of Israel, I will judge you every one after his ways.

Matthew 16:27. For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works.

Romans 2:6. Who will render to every man according to his deeds:

1 Corinthians 3:8. Now he that planteth and he that watereth are one: and every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour.

2 Corinthians 5:10. For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

Ephesians 6:8. Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

Colossians 3:25. But he that doeth wrong shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

1 Peter 1:17. And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear:

Revelation 22:12. And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.

According To That He Hath Done, Whether It Be Good Or Bad

2 Corinthians 5:10. For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

1 Kings 8:32. Then hear thou in heaven, and do, and judge thy servants, condemning the wicked, to bring his way upon his head; and justifying the righteous, to give him according to his righteousness.

1 Kings 8:39. Then hear thou in heaven thy dwelling place, and forgive, and do, and give to every man according to his ways, whose heart thou knowest; (for thou, even thou only, knowest the hearts of all the children of men;)

Job 34:11. For the work of a man shall he render unto him, and cause every man to find according to his ways.

Psalms 62:12. Also unto thee, O Lord, belongeth mercy: for thou renderest to every man according to his work.

Isaiah 3:10-11 Say ye to the righteous, that it shall be well with him: for they shall eat the fruit of their doings. Woe unto the wicked! it shall be ill with him: for the reward of his hands shall be given him.

Romans 2:5-10. But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; Who will render to every man according to his deeds: To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life: But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath, Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile; But glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile:

1 Corinthians 4:5. Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.

Galatians 6:7-8. Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

Ephesians 6:8. Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

Colossians 3:24-25. Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ. But he that doeth wrong shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

Revelation 2:23. And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

Revelation 20:12-13. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

Revelation 22:12. And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.

With God, There Is No Respect of Persons

Deuteronomy 10:17. For the LORD your God is God of gods, and Lord of lords, a great God, a mighty, and a terrible, which regardeth not persons, nor taketh reward:

2 Chronicles 19:7. Wherefore now let the fear of the LORD be upon you; take heed and do it: for there is no iniquity with the LORD our God, nor respect of persons, nor taking of gifts.

Job 34:19. How much less to him that accepteth not the persons of princes, nor regardeth the rich more than the poor? for they all are the work of his hands.

Ezekiel 33:20. Yet ye say, The way of the Lord is not equal. O ye house of Israel, I will judge you every one after his ways.

Matthew 22:16. And they sent out unto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men.

Acts 10:34-35. Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.

Romans 2:10-11. But glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile: For there is no respect of persons with God.

Galatians 2:6. But of these who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me: God accepteth no man's person:) for they who seemed to be somewhat in conference added nothing to me:

Ephesians 6:9. And, ye masters, do the same things unto them, forbearing threatening: knowing that your Master also is in heaven; neither is there respect of persons with him.

Colossians 3:25. But he that doeth wrong shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

1 Peter 1:17. And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear:

The Cross, Christ's Finished Work

At a concert, a side act introduces the show before the main event, which is performed by the concert star. In Christianity, the main event is entirely focused on Christ's one sacrifice on the Cross, which atoned for the sins of the whole world.

As a Seventh-day Adventist, I was brought up to believe that the 'present truth' was a matter of Sunday vs. Saturday, with the Sunday keepers facing damnation and 'the Remnant' who observed Saturday as the chosen ones. However, in 2010, my journey of reevaluation, guided by the book of Hebrews, led me to the understanding that this narrative is not biblically sound. This profound realization prompted me to renounce Adventism and embrace Christianity, placing my trust solely in Christ for my salvation. The contrast between my traditional beliefs and this new understanding was stark, but it was a change I knew I had to make.

For Roman Catholics, the star is Mary, and the backup dancers are the saints, and Christ fits in there somewhere, but no one is quite certain where or how. Everyone knows that Christ suffered and died on the Cross, but no one can quite explain why.

Instead of looking to the atonement made exclusively by Jesus' death on the Cross, the various sects of Christianity look to holy days, special diets, saints, and their religious works to atone for their sins.

For example, a Roman Catholic may attend as many as 10,000 Masses in their lifetime and, if wealthy enough, may pay for 4,000 more Masses after death. 14,000 combined masses are not enough to purge their sins, and so they must go on to suffer in Purgatory, a place where the souls of the righteous are purified before they can enter heaven for untold millions of years.

So, throughout their lifetimes, Roman Catholics endeavor to gain as much merit as possible by buying indulgences, paying to venerate holy relics, and attending special masses conducted by the Pope himself. However, more than all of this religion is needed to purge their sins. So they must go on to suffer in Purgatory for untold millions of years. Pope John Paul II died in 2005. Where is Pope John Paul II today? According to Roman Catholicism, He is purging his sins in Purgatory. Apparently, His adoration of Mary did not pay off for him. But it may have lessened his time in Purgatory, but who really knows for certain by how much?

What is center stage in the gospel? Is it earning our merit, reducing our time in purgatory through religious acts? Is it Mary, the saints, or the Pope? Is it Joseph Smith (for the Mormons), the Watch Tower Society (for the Jehovah's Witnesses). What contest does God care most deeply about that must be presented before the whole world? What is the gospel

itself that every nation must hear? Is it Saturday vs. Sunday? Is it the good news that you must forsake eating meat and become a vegan before a Sunday law? Is that good news? Or is the good news that God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, and that whoever believes in Him will not perish but have everlasting life?

The famous hymn "At the Cross" declares that it was at the Cross that the author first saw the light. I had that experience personally through the following Bible study. Can you set aside whatever religion you have been taught by, forget everything you know, and concentrate on the following verses as though they were all that existed in the Bible for just a few moments? If you can, then you too can experience the light for the first time at the Cross. This personal revelation is a powerful and transformative experience that I wish for all of you to have.

The Atonement: Jesus Christ's Death on the Cross

Jesus Christ learned **obedience** from the things he suffered.

Hebrews 5:8 Though he were a Son, yet **learned he obedience by the things which he suffered;**

By the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.

Romans 5:17-19 For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life **by one, Jesus Christ.**) Therefore as by the offence of one *judgment came* upon all men to condemnation; even so **by the righteousness of one** *the free gift came* upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so **by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.**

The Word of Faith.

Romans 10:8-13 But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, *even* in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, **the word of faith, which we preach;** That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed. For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. **For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved.**

Received ye the Spirit By Faith, or by the Law?

Galatians 3:2 This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by **the hearing of faith**?

Galatians 3:5 He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, *doeth he it* by the works of the law, or **by the hearing of faith**?

Christ Suffered "Once," Not Daily.

Hebrews 7:27. Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for **this he did once**, when he offered up himself.

Hebrews 9:7. But **into the second** *went* the high priest alone once every year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and *for* the errors of the people:

Hebrews 9:12. Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but **by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place**, having obtained eternal redemption *for us*.

Hebrews 9:25-26. Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.

Hebrews 9:28. So **Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many**; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation.

Hebrews 10:10. By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

1 Peter 3:18. For **Christ also hath once suffered for sins**, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:

This Do in Remembrance of Me.

Take Up His Cross Daily (In Memory), and Follow Me.

Luke 9:23. **and** he said to *them* all, If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.

Luke 22:14-20. **and** when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. and he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer: For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. and he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide *it* among yourselves: For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come. and he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake *it*, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: **this do in remembrance of me**. Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup *is* the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

1 Corinthians 15:1-4. Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand; By which also ye are saved, **if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you**, unless ye have believed in vain. For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; and that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:

1 Corinthians 11:23-26. For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the *same* night in which he was betrayed took bread: and when he had given thanks, he brake *it*, and said, *Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me.* After the same manner also *he took* the cup, when he had supped, saying, *This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me.* For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come.

Christ's One-Time Death on the Cross Obtained Eternal Redemption For Us

Hebrews 9:12 Neither by the blood of goats and calves, **but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.**

Believers are SANCTIFIED by the Cross ONCE—Forever.

Hebrews 10:10. By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

Believers Are PERFECTED by the Cross ONCE—Forever.

Hebrews 10:14. For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.

Believers Are WASHED by the Cross.

Revelation 1:5. and from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. **Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,**

Believers Are JUSTIFIED by the Cross.

1 Corinthians 6:11. and such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

Romans 5:9. Much more then, **being now justified by his blood,** we shall be saved from wrath through him.

Believers Are FORGIVEN of ALL Sin by the Cross.

Ephesians 1:7. In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

1 John 1:7. But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and **the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.**

Believers Have the ATONEMENT Right Now.

Romans 5:11. and not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.

Believers Have PEACE With God.

Romans 5:1. Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

Believers Have Been RECONCILED With God by the Cross.

2 Corinthians 5:17-21. Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. and all things are of **God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ**, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; To wit, that **God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them;** and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God. For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

Let's Recap:

- Jesus ONE Offering Upon the Cross in AD 33, was for the Sins of the WHOLE World.
- God's Wrath Has Been Eternally Satisfied by the Cross.
- Believers are SANCTIFIED.
- Believers are PERFECTED.
- Believers are WASHED.
- Believers are JUSTIFIED.
- Believers have the ATONEMENT right now.
- Believers have PEACE with God.
- Believers have Been RECONCILED with God by Jesus death on the Cross.

Jesus PURGED Our Sins, by Himself, & then He Sat Down. Hebrews 1:3.

The Cross, a Finished Work

Jesus Offering Upon the Cross was for the Sins of the WHOLE World.

God's Wrath Has Been ETERNALLY Satisfied by the Cross.

Believers are PERFECTED Forever.

Believers are WASHED.

Believers are SANCTIFIED Forever by the Cross.



Believers have Been RECONCILED with God by the Cross.

Believers are JUSTIFIED.

Believers have the ATONEMENT Now.

Believers have PEACE with God.

Jesus PURGED Our Sins by Himself, & then He Sat Down.

The blood of Jesus Christ, his Son, cleansed us from all sin.

Ephesians 1:7 In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

1 John 1:7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

Revelation 1:5. and from Jesus Christ, *who is* the faithful witness, *and* the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. **Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,**

Jesus Redeemed us to God by His Blood.

Revelation 5:9. and they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for **thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood** out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

Revelation 7:14. and I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. and he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, **and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.**

“This Do in Remembrance of Me.” The Lord’s Supper.

By David Michael Curtis

Luke 22:14-20 And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. And he said unto them, *With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer: For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves: For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come. And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: **this do in remembrance of me.** Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, **This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.***

1 Corinthians 15:1-4 ¶ Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand; By which also ye are saved, **if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you**, unless ye have believed in vain. For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:

1 Corinthians 11:23-26 ¶ For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jesus the *same* night in which he was betrayed took bread: And when he had given thanks, he brake *it*, and said, *Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: **this do in remembrance of me.*** After the same manner also *he took* the cup, when he had supped, saying, *This cup is the new testament in my blood: **this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me.*** For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come.

Grammarly Premium (a professional grammar checker) would update '**This Do in Remembrance of Me**' and render it, '**This is in Remembrance of Me.**' This is precisely the position that Protestants have taken since the times of Martin Luther, John Calvin, and John Knox. The Lord's Supper is symbolic and intended by Christ to be an opportunity to remember what Christ accomplished on the Cross. Let's settle the whole matter now and prove it.

The Passover

The Passover itself was in remembrance of the tenth plague and the final night of the Hebrews in Egypt. The Passover lamb, year by year, did not save Israel from Egypt year by year. It was merely symbolic and a reminder. The only lamb that saved their firstborn was slain in 1446 BC when they applied its blood over the doorposts of their houses with hyssop.

The Lord's Supper is intended to remind us of the Gospel.

Religion would have us believe that bread and wine itself save us. Do not be deceived. Remember Christ's flesh and his blood. Go back in your mind to April 1, 33 AD. Remember the death of Christ on the Cross. Salvation is paid in full by the blood of Jesus Christ shed at Calvary. Jesus died once. We can only hear this good news; we cannot reenact it or recrucify him through the symbols of bread and wine.

Remember Christ's flesh and his blood.

Give it a try right now! Remember Christ's flesh and his blood. Do not trust in material bread and wine, but in Christ's real flesh and real blood that was shed for you on April 1, 33 AD. Israel did not think the Passover lamb that was sacrificed at the precise moment Jesus died in 33 AD was more significant than the lamb that was slain in 1446 BC to save their firstborn. Israel knew the year-by-year Passover lamb was symbolic as a reminder of the Exodus.

Idolatry vs. the Gospel.

True worship is by faith in God. Idolatry is the worship of an object made by the hands of men. Above the Ark of the Covenant, there were no images of God, only cherubim, one on the left and one on the right, with an empty space in the middle. If we trust in the material bread and wine to impart grace or merit, believing in them instead of Christ himself, It is idolatry. At the heart of Roman Catholicism is idolatry. The veneration of bread and wine, the veneration of Mary and the saints, the veneration of the Pope, and a thousand so-called holy pilgrimages to venerate a million so-called holy relics.

The Roman soldiers not only beheld the wood of the true cross, but they also touched it and handled the nails that they drove into Christ's body. Was it wood and iron nails that saved us, or is it the blood of Christ alone that was sprinkled from the cross for six hours that saved us? We cannot travel to view the blood of Christ. We can only hear the gospel in Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John and in Isaiah 53 and believe Jesus's death on the Cross atoned for the sins of the world by faith alone.

How often should we eat bread and drink wine in remembrance of Christ's death on the Cross?

As Oft as You Drink It

1 Corinthians 11:25-26. After the same manner also *he took* the cup, when he had supped, saying, **This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me.** For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come.

Question. How often did the Galileans Eat Bread?

Answer. Daily. Bread was a common part of the Galilean diet in the first century.

Question. How often did the Galileans drink wine?

Answer. Daily. Wine was a common part of the Galilean diet in the first century.

The Galilean followers of Christ in the first century met in houses **daily** and on the first day of the week, and they broke bread! This was not a sop, a mere mouthful or crumb; it was a feast.

Luke 24:35 And they told what things *were done* in the way, and how **he was known of them in breaking of bread**.

Acts 2:42 And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and **in breaking of bread**, and in prayers.

Acts 2:46 And they, **continuing daily** with one accord in the temple, **and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness** and singleness of heart,

Question. How often do Christ's followers remember the cross?

Answer. Daily.

Luke 9:23 And he said to *them* all, **If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.**

Question. How often do you eat and drink?

Answer. Daily.

Question. How often do you remember Jesus's death on the cross?

Answer. ?

As a Seventh-Day Adventist for 17 Years.

I knew that Christ suffered and died, but I did not really understand what he had accomplished on the Cross. Four times a year, we conducted a solemn ritual I thought was the Lord's Supper. We washed each other's feet, but I did not understand or know that I had the atonement right now. Why not?

I was taught that no one could have atonement before 1844 and that it was only possible for me to personally have atonement after proving myself worthy before the Ten Commandments during an investigative judgment.

So, what was the Lord's Supper? It was nothing more than a meaningless ritual, a religious act with no real significance. I wasn't justified, sanctified, washed, cleansed yet. My sins hadn't been purged. As a Seventh Day Adventist, I was still waiting for my case to come up before the Investigative Judgment to prove my character was worthy of atonement. Christ's blood hadn't been applied to the doorpost of my heart yet.

This Do in Remembrance of Me

Remembering the flesh and blood of Jesus Christ is very essence of the Gospel itself. Please wake up, child, you have been asleep; it is time to wake up and view the sunrise. It is a new day. Christ is risen! He is no longer in the tomb. But we must remember what happened three days earlier.

Romans 5:10-11 For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life. And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom **we have now received the atonement.**

“Believe the Gospel” – Faith.

We are saved by hope.

Romans 8:24-25 For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for? But if we hope for that we see not, *then* do we with patience wait for *it*.

Is the substance of things hoped for.

Hebrews 11:1. Now Faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.

Is the evidence of things not seen.

Hebrews 11:1. Now Faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.

Faith is Commanded.

Matthew 11:22. But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you.

1 John 3:23. And this is his commandment, That we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment.

The Objects of, Are.

God.

John 14:1. Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me.

Christ.

John 6:29. Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

Acts 20:21. Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and Faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.

Writings of Moses.

John 5:46. For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me.

Acts 24:14. But this I Confess unto thee, that after the way which they call heresy, so worship I the God of my Fathers, believing all things which are written in The Law and in the Prophets:

Writings of the Prophets.

2 Chronicles 20:20. And they rose early in the morning, and went forth into the wilderness of Tekoa: and as they went forth, Jehoshaphat stood and said, Hear me, O Judah, and ye inhabitants of Jerusalem; Believe in the LORD your God, so shall ye be established; believe his Prophets, so shall ye prosper.

Acts 26:27. King Agrippa, believest thou the Prophets? I know that thou believest.

The Gospel.

Mark 1:15. And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the Kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the Gospel.

Promises of God.

Romans 4:21. And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform.

Hebrews 11:13. These all died in Faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

In Christ Is

The gift of God.

Romans 12:3. For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of Faith.

Ephesians 2:8. For by grace are ye saved through Faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God:

Ephesians 6:23. Peace be to the Brethren, and love with Faith, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Philippians 1:29. For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake;

The work of God.

Acts 11:21. And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number believed, and turned unto the Lord.

1 Corinthians 2:5. That your Faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

Precious.

2 Peter 1:1. Simon Peter, a Servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious Faith with us through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ:

Most holy.

Jude 20. But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy Faith, praying in the Holy Ghost,

Fruitful.

1 Thessalonians 1:3. Remembering without ceasing your work of Faith, and labour of love, and Patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father;

Accompanied by repentance.

Mark 1:15. And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the Kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the Gospel.

Luke 24:47. And that repentance and remission of Sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

Followed by conversion.

Acts 11:21. And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number believed, and turned unto the Lord.

Christ is the Author and Finisher of.

Hebrews 12:2. Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our Faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

Is a gift of the Holy Ghost.

1 Corinthians 12:9. To another Faith by the same Spirit; to another the Gifts of Healing by the same Spirit;

The Scriptures are designed to produce.

John 20:31. But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.

2 Timothy 3:15. And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto Salvation through Faith which is in Christ Jesus.

Preaching is designed to produce.

John 17:20. Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word;

Acts 8:12. But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the Kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

Romans 10:14-15. How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the Gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

Romans 10:17. So then Faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

1 Corinthians 3:5. Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man?

Through It Is

Remission of Sins.

Acts 10:43. To him give all the Prophets Witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of Sins.

Romans 3:25. Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through Faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of Sins that are past, through the forbearance of God;

Justification.

Acts 13:39. And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by The Law of Moses.

Romans 3:21-22. But now the righteousness of God without The Law is manifested, being witnessed by The Law and the Prophets; Even the righteousness of God which is by Faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference:

Romans 3:28. Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by Faith without the deeds of The Law.

Romans 5:1. Therefore being justified by Faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

Galatians 2:16. Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of The Law, but by the Faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the works of The Law: for by the works of The Law shall no flesh be justified.

Salvation.

Mark 16:16. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.

Acts 16:31. And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

Sanctification.

Acts 15:9. And put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by Faith.

Acts 26:18. To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

Spiritual Light.

John 12:36. While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself from them.

John 12:46. I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness.

Spiritual life.

John 20:31. But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.

Galatians 2:20. I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the Faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

Eternal Life.

John 3:15. That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.

John 6:40. And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

John 6:47. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.

Rest in heaven.

Hebrews 4:3. For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

Edification.

1 Timothy 1:4. Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in Faith: so do.

Jude 20. But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy Faith, praying in the Holy Ghost,

Preservation.

1 Peter 1:5. Who are kept by the power of God through Faith unto Salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.

Adoption.

John 1:12. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:

Galatians 3:26. For ye are all the children of God by Faith in Christ Jesus.

Access to God.

Romans 5:2. By whom also we have access by Faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

Ephesians 3:12. In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the Faith of him.

Inheritance of the promises.

Galatians 3:22. But the scripture hath concluded all under Sin, that the promise by Faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

Hebrews 6:12. That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through Faith and Patience inherit the promises.

The gift of the Holy Ghost.

Acts 11:15-17. And as I began to speak, the Holy Ghost fell on them, as on us at the beginning. Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how that he said, John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost. Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as he did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ; what was I, that I could withstand God?

Galatians 3:14. That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through Faith.

Ephesians 1:13. In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the Gospel of your Salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that Holy Spirit of promise,

Impossible to please God without.

Hebrews 11:6. But without Faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

Justification is by, to be of grace.

Romans 4:16. Therefore it is of Faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of The Law, but to that also which is of the Faith of Abraham; who is the Father of us all,

Essential to the profitable reception of the Gospel.

Hebrews 4:2. For unto us was the Gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with Faith in them that heard it.

Necessary in the Christian warfare.

1 Timothy 1:18. This charge I commit unto thee, son Timothy, according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest war a good warfare;

1 Timothy 6:12. Fight the good fight of Faith, lay hold on Eternal Life, whereunto thou Art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

The Gospel effectual in those who have.

1 Thessalonians 2:13. For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.

Excludes self-justification.

Romans 10:3-4. For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God. For Christ is the end of The Law for righteousness to every one that believeth.

Excludes boasting.

Romans 3:27. Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by The Law of Faith.

Works by love.

Galatians 5:6. For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but Faith which worketh by love.

1 Timothy 1:5. Now the end of the commandment is Charity out of a pure heart, and of a good Conscience, and of Faith unfeigned:

Philemon 5. Hearing of thy love and Faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all Saints;

Produces

Hope.

Romans 5:2. By whom also we have access by Faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

Joy.

Acts 16:34. And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, believing in God with all his house.

1 Peter 1:8. Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom, though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory:

Peace.

Romans 15:13. Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost.

Confidence.

Isaiah 28:16. Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste.

1 Peter 2:6. Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.

Boldness in preaching.

Psalms 116:10. I believed, therefore have I spoken: I was greatly Afflicted:

2 Corinthians 4:13. We having the same spirit of Faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and therefore speak;

Christ is precious to those having.

1 Peter 2:7. Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,

Christ dwells in the heart by.

Ephesians 3:17. That Christ may dwell in your hearts by Faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love,

Necessary in prayer.

Matthew 21:22. And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

James 1:6. But let him ask in Faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed.

Those who are not Christ's have not.

John 10:26-27. But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

Evidence of the new birth.

1 John 5:1. Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and every one that loveth him that Begat loveth him also that is begotten of him.

By It Saints

Live.

Galatians 2:20. I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the Faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

Stand.

Romans 11:20. Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by Faith. Be not highminded, but fear:

2 Corinthians 1:24. Not for that we have dominion over your Faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by Faith ye stand.

Walk.

Romans 4:12. And the Father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but who also walk in the steps of that Faith of our Father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised.

2 Corinthians 5:7. (For we walk by Faith, not by sight:)

Obtain a good report.

Hebrews 11:2. For by it the elders obtained a good report.

Overcome the world.

1 John 5:4-5. For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our Faith. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

Resist the devil.

1 Peter 5:9. Whom resist stedfast in the Faith, knowing that the same Afflictions are accomplished in your Brethren that are in the world.

Overcome the devil.

Ephesians 6:16. Above all, taking the shield of Faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

Are supported.

Psalms 27:13. I had fainted, unless I had believed to see the goodness of the LORD in the land of the living.

1 Timothy 4:10. For therefore we both labour and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe.

Saints die in.

Hebrews 11:13. These all died in Faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

Saints Should

Be sincere in.

1 Timothy 1:5. Now the end of the commandment is Charity out of a pure heart, and of a good Conscience, and of Faith unfeigned:

2 Timothy 1:5. When I call to remembrance the unfeigned Faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am persuaded that in thee also.

Abound in.

2 Corinthians 8:7 Therefore, as ye abound in every thing, in Faith, and utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love to us, see that ye abound in this grace also.

Continue in.

Acts 14:22. Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the Faith, and that we must through much Tribulation enter into the Kingdom of God.

Colossians 1:23. If ye continue in the Faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the Gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister;

Be strong in.

Romans 4:20-25. He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God; And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform. And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness. Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him; But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification....

Stand fast in.

1 Corinthians 16:13. Watch ye, stand fast in the Faith, quit you like men, be strong.

Be grounded and settled in.

Colossians 1:23. If ye continue in the Faith grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the Gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister;

Hold, with a Good Conscience.

1 Timothy 1:19. Holding Faith, and a good Conscience; which some having put away concerning Faith have made shipwreck:

Pray for the increase of.

Luke 17:5. And the Apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our Faith.

Have full Assurance of.

2 Timothy 1:12. For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.

Hebrews 10:22. Let us draw near with a true heart in full Assurance of Faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil Conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.

True, evidenced by its fruits.

James 2:21-26. Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God. Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent *them* out another way? For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

Without fruits, is Dead.

James 2:17. Even so Faith, if it hath not works, is Dead, being alone.

James 2:20. But wilt thou know, O vain man, that Faith without works is Dead?

James 2:26. For as the body without the spirit is Dead, so Faith without works is Dead also.

Examine whether you be in.

2 Corinthians 13:5. Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the Faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

All difficulties overcome by.

Matthew 17:20. And Jesus said unto them, *Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.*

Matthew 21:21. Jesus answered and said unto them, *Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this which is done to the fig tree, but also if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall be done.*

Mark 9:23. Jesus said unto him, *If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.*

All things should be done in.

Romans 14:22. Hast thou Faith? have it to thyself before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth.

Whatever is not of, is Sin.

Romans 14:23. And he that doubteth is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of Faith: for whatsoever is not of Faith is Sin.

Often tried by Affliction.

1 Peter 1:6-7. Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a season, if need be, ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations: That the trial of your Faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ:

Trial of, works Patience.

James 1:3. Knowing this, that the trying of your Faith worketh Patience.

The wicked often profess.

Acts 8:13. Then Simon himself believed also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the Miracles and signs which were done.

Acts 8:21. Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter: for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.

The wicked destitute of.

John 10:25. Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear Witness of me.

John 12:37. But though he had done so many Miracles before them, yet they believed not on him:

Acts 19:9. But when Divers were hardened, and believed not, but spake evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing daily in the school of one Tyrannus.

2 Thessalonians 3:2. And that we may be delivered from unreasonable and wicked men: for all men have not Faith.

Protection of, illustrated.

A shield,

Ephesians 6:16. Above all, taking the shield of Faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

A breastplate,

1 Thessalonians 5:8. But let us, who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of Faith and love; and for an helmet, the hope of Salvation.

Exemplified.

Caleb,

Numbers 13:30. And Caleb stilled the people before Moses, and said, Let us go up at once, and possess it; for we are well able to overcome it.

Job,

Job 19:25. For I know that my redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth:

Shadrach,

Daniel 3:17. If it be so, (Our God Whom We Serve is Able to Deliver Us) from the burning Fiery Furnace, and he will deliver us out of thine hand, O king.

Daniel,

Daniel 6:10. Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks before his God, as he did aforetime.

Daniel 6:23. Then was the king exceeding glad for him, and commanded that they should take Daniel up out of the den. So Daniel was taken up out of the den, and no manner of hurt was found upon him, because he believed in his God.

Peter,

Matthew 16:16. And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.

Woman who was a sinner,

Luke 7:50. And he said to the woman, Thy Faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

Nathanael,

John 1:49. Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou Art the Son of God; thou Art the King of Israel.

Samaritans,

John 4:39. And many of the Samaritans of that city believed on him for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told me all that ever I did.

Martha,

John 11:27. She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe that thou Art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.

The Disciples,

John 16:30. Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God.

Thomas,

John 20:28. And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God.

Stephen,

Acts 6:5. And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of Faith and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch:

Priests,

Acts 6:7. And the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the Faith.

Ethiopian,

Acts 8:37. And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.

Barnabas,

Acts 11:24. For he was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost and of Faith: and much people was added unto the Lord.

Sergius Paulus,

Acts 13:12. Then the deputy, when he saw what was done, believed, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.

Philippian jailor,

Acts 16:31. And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

Acts 16:34. And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, believing in God with all his house.

Romans,

Romans 1:8. First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your Faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

Colossians,

Colossians 1:4. Since we heard of your Faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love which ye have to all the Saints,

Thessalonians,

1 Thessalonians 1:3. Remembering without ceasing your work of Faith, and labour of love, and Patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father;

Lois,

2 Timothy 1:5. When I call to remembrance the unfeigned Faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am persuaded that in thee also.

Paul,

2 Timothy 4:7. I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the Faith:

Abel,

Hebrews 11:4. By Faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained Witness that he was Righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being Dead yet speaketh.

Enoch,

Hebrews 11:5. By Faith Enoch was translated that he should not see Death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God.

Noah,

Hebrews 11:7. By Faith Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by Faith.

Abraham,

Hebrews 11:8. By Faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went.

Hebrews 11:17. By Faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son,

Isaac,

Hebrews 11:20. By Faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come.

Jacob,

Hebrews 11:21. By Faith Jacob, when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph; and worshipped, leaning upon the top of his staff.

Joseph,

Hebrews 11:22. By Faith Joseph, when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel; and gave commandment concerning his bones.

Moses,

Hebrews 11:24. By Faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter;

Hebrews 11:27. By Faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing him who is invisible.

Rahab,

Hebrews 11:31. By Faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace.

Gideon

Hebrews 11:32-33. And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae; of David also, and Samuel, and of the Prophets: Who through Faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions,

Hebrews 11:39. And these all, having obtained a good report through Faith, received not the promise:

“Repent!” – What is Repentance?

What it is.

Isaiah 45:22. Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else.

Matthew 6:19-21. Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

Acts 14:15. And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein:

2 Corinthians 5:17. Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

Colossians 3:2. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth.

1 Thessalonians 1:9. For they themselves shew of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from Idols to serve the living and true God;

Hebrews 12:1-2. Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the Sin which doth so easily Beset us, and let us run with Patience the race that is set before us, Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our Faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

Commanded to all by God.

Ezekiel 18:30-32. Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways, saith the Lord GOD. Repent, and turn *yourselves* from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin. Cast away from you all your transgressions, whereby ye have transgressed; and make you a new heart and a new spirit: for why will ye die, O house of Israel? For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the Lord GOD: wherefore turn *yourselves*, and live ye.

Acts 17:30. And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent:

Commanded by Christ.

Revelation 2:5. Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

Revelation 3:3. Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

Given by God.

Acts 11:18. When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.

2 Timothy 2:25. In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth;

Christ came to call sinners to.

Matthew 9:13. But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the Righteous, but sinners to repentance.

Christ exalted to give.

Acts 5:31. Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of Sins.

By the operation of the Holy Ghost.

Zechariah 12:10. And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn.

Called repentance unto life.

Acts 11:18. When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.

Called repentance unto Salvation.

2 Corinthians 7:10. For godly sorrow worketh repentance to Salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh Death.

We Should Be Led To, By

The long-suffering of God.

Genesis 6:3. And the LORD said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years.

1 Peter 3:20. Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water.

2 Peter 3:9. The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

The goodness of God.

Romans 2:4. Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?

The chastisements of God.

1 Kings 8:47. Yet if they shall Bethink themselves in the land whither they were carried captives, and repent, and make supplication unto thee in the land of them that carried them captives, saying, We have Sinned, and have done perversely, we have committed wickedness;

Revelation 3:19. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

Godly sorrow works.

2 Corinthians 7:10. For godly sorrow worketh repentance to Salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh Death.

Necessary to the pardon of Sin.

Acts 2:38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of Sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Acts 3:19. Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your Sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord;

Acts 8:22. Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.

Conviction of Sin necessary to.

1 Kings 8:38. What prayer and supplication soever be made by any man, or by all thy people Israel, which shall know every man the plague of his own heart, and spread forth his hands toward this house:

Proverbs 28:13. He that covereth his Sins shall not prosper: but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy.

Acts 2:37. Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the Apostles, Men and Brethren, what shall we do?

Acts 19:18. And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds.

Preached

By Christ.

Matthew 4:17. From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, **Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.**

Mark 1:15. And saying, **The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.**

By John The Baptist.

Matthew 3:2. And saying, Repent ye: for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.

By the Apostles.

Mark 6:12. And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

Acts 20:21. Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and Faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.

In the name of Christ.

Luke 24:47. And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

Not to be repented of.

2 Corinthians 7:10. For godly sorrow worketh repentance to Salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh Death.

The present time the season for.

Psalms 95:7-8. For he is our God; and we are the people of his pasture, and the sheep of his hand. To day if ye will hear his voice, 8 Harden not your heart, as in the provocation, and as in the day of temptation in the wilderness:

There is joy in heaven over one sinner brought to.

Luke 15:7. I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

Luke 15:10. Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

Ministers should rejoice over their people on their.

2 Corinthians 7:9. Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing.

Should be evidenced by fruits.

Isaiah 1:16-17. Wash you, make you clean; put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes; cease to do evil; Learn to do well; seek Judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow.

Should Be Accompanied By

Humility.

2 Chronicles 7:14. If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their Sin, and will heal their land.

James 4:9-10. Be Afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness. Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.

Shame and confusion.

Ezra 9:6-15. And said, O my God, I am ashamed and blush to lift up my face to thee, my God: for our iniquities are increased over *our* head, and our trespass is grown up unto the heavens. Since the days of our fathers *have we been* in a great trespass unto this day; and for our iniquities have we, our kings, *and* our priests, been delivered into the hand of the kings of the lands, to the sword, to captivity, and to a spoil, and to confusion of face, as *it is* this day. And now for a little space grace hath been *shewed* from the LORD our God, to leave us a remnant to escape, and to give us a nail in his holy place, that our God may lighten our eyes, and give us a little reviving in our bondage. For we *were* bondmen; yet our God hath not forsaken us in our bondage, but hath extended mercy unto us in the sight of the kings of Persia, to give us a reviving, to set up the house of our God, and to repair the desolations thereof, and to give us a wall in Judah and in Jerusalem. And now, O our God, what shall we say after this? for we have forsaken thy commandments, Which thou hast commanded by thy servants the prophets, saying, The land, unto which ye go to possess it, is an unclean land with the filthiness of the people of the lands, with their abominations, which have filled it from one end to another with their uncleanness. Now therefore give not your daughters unto their sons, neither take their daughters unto your sons, nor seek their peace or their wealth for ever: that ye may be strong, and eat the good of the land, and leave *it* for an inheritance to your children for ever. And after all that is come upon us for our evil deeds, and for our great trespass, seeing that thou our God hast punished us less than our iniquities *deserve*, and hast given us *such* deliverance as this; Should we again break thy commandments, and join in affinity with the people of these abominations? wouldest not thou be angry with us till thou hadst consumed *us*, so that *there should be* no remnant nor escaping? O LORD God of Israel, thou *art* righteous: for we remain yet escaped, as *it is* this day: behold, we *are* before thee in our trespasses: for we cannot stand before thee because of this.

Jeremiah 31:19. Surely after that I was turned, I repented; and after that I was instructed, I smote upon my thigh: I was ashamed, yea, even confounded, because I did bear the reproach of my youth.

Ezekiel 16:61. Then thou shalt remember thy ways, and be ashamed, when thou shalt receive thy sisters, thine elder and thy younger: and I will give them unto thee for daughters, but not by thy covenant.

Ezekiel 16:63. That thou mayest remember, and be confounded, and never open thy mouth any more because of thy shame, when I am pacified toward thee for all that thou hast done, saith the Lord GOD.

Self-abhorrence.

Job 42:6. Wherefore I Abhor myself, and repent in dust and ashes.

Confession.

Leviticus 26:40. If they shall Confess their iniquity, and the iniquity of their Fathers, with their trespass which they trespassed against me, and that also they have walked contrary unto me;

Job 33:27. He looketh upon men, and if any say, I have Sinned, and perverted that which was right, and it profited me not;

Faith.

Matthew 21:32. For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen *it*, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.

Mark 1:15. And saying, *The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.*

Acts 20:21. Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and Faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.

Prayer.

1 Kings 8:33. When thy people Israel be smitten down before the enemy, because they have Sinned against thee, and shall turn again to thee, and Confess thy name, and pray, and make supplication unto thee in this house:

Acts 8:22. Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.

Conversion.

Acts 3:19. Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your Sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord;

Acts 26:20. But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judaea, and *then* to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance.

Turning from Sin.

2 Chronicles 6:26. When the heaven is shut up, and there is no Rain, because they have Sinned against thee; yet if they pray toward this place, and Confess thy name, and turn from their Sin, when thou dost afflict them;

Turning from idolatry.

Ezekiel 14:6. Therefore say unto the house of Israel, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Repent, and turn yourselves from your Idols; and turn away your faces from all your abominations.

1 Thessalonians 1:9. For they themselves shew of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from Idols to serve the living and true God;

Greater zeal in the path of duty.

2 Corinthians 7:11. For behold this selfsame thing, that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of yourselves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge! In all things ye have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter.

Exhortations to.

Ezekiel 14:6. Therefore say unto the house of Israel, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Repent, and turn yourselves from your Idols; and turn away your faces from all your abominations.

Ezekiel 18:30. Therefore I will Judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways, saith the Lord GOD. Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin.

Acts 2:38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of Sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Acts 3:19. Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your Sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord;

The Wicked

Averse to.

Jeremiah 8:6. I hearkened and heard, but they spake not aright: no man repented him of his wickedness, saying, What have I done? every one turned to his course, as the horse rusheth into the battle.

Matthew 21:32. For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen *it*, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.

Not led to by the judgments of God.

Revelation 9:20. And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues yet Repented Not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and Idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk:

Revelation 16:9. And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they Repented Not to give him glory.

Not led to, by miraculous interference.

Luke 16:30-31. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

Neglect the time given for.

Revelation 2:21. And I gave her space to repent of her Fornication; and she Repented Not.

Condemned for neglecting.

Matthew 11:20. Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not:

Danger of neglecting.

Matthew 11:20-24. Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not: Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works, which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee.

Luke 13:3. I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

Luke 13:5. I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

Neglect of, followed by swift Judgment.

Revelation 2:5. Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

Revelation 2:16. Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

Denied to apostates.

Hebrews 6:4-6. For *it is* impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put *him* to an open shame.

Illustrated.

Luke 15:18-21. I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.

Luke 18:13. And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.

The Prodigal Son,

Luke 15:17-19. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.

The Repentant Son,

Matthew 21:29. He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.

Paul,

Galatians 1:23. But they had heard only, That he which persecuted us in times past now preacheth the faith which once he destroyed.

True Exemplified.

Israelites,

Judges 10:15-16. And the children of Israel said unto the LORD, We have Sinned: do thou unto us whatsoever seemeth good unto thee; deliver us only, we pray thee, this day. And they put away the strange gods from among them, and served the LORD: and his soul was grieved for the misery of Israel.

David,

2 Samuel 12:13. And David said unto Nathan, I have Sinned against the LORD. And Nathan said unto David, The LORD also hath put away thy Sin; thou shalt not die.

Manasseh,

2 Chronicles 33:12-13. And when he was in Affliction, he Besought the LORD his God, and humbled himself greatly before the God of his Fathers, And prayed unto him: and he was intreated of him, and heard his supplication, and brought him again to Jerusalem into his kingdom. Then Manasseh knew that the LORD he was God.

Job,

Job 42:6. Wherefore I Abhor myself, and repent in dust and ashes.

Nineveh,

Jonah 3:5-8. So the people of Nineveh believed God, and proclaimed a fast, and put on sackcloth, from the greatest of them even to the least of them. For word came unto the king of Nineveh, and he arose from his throne, and he laid his robe from him, and covered *him* with sackcloth, and sat in ashes. And he caused *it* to be proclaimed and published through Nineveh by the decree of the king and his nobles, saying, Let neither man nor beast, herd nor flock, taste any thing: let them not feed, nor drink water: But let man and beast be covered with sackcloth, and cry mightily unto God: yea, let them turn every one from his evil way, and from the violence that *is* in their hands.

Matthew 12:41. *The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here.*

Peter,

Matthew 26:75. And Peter remembered the word of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

Zaccheus,

Luke 19:8. And Zacchaeus stood, and said unto the Lord; Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore *him* fourfold.

Thief on the Cross,

Luke 23:40-41. But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.

Corinthians,

2 Corinthians 7:9-10. Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing. For godly sorrow worketh repentance to Salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh Death.

False Exemplified.

Saul,

1 Samuel 15:24-30. And Saul said unto Samuel, I have sinned: for I have transgressed the commandment of the LORD, and thy words: because I feared the people, and obeyed their voice. Now therefore, I pray thee, pardon my sin, and turn again with me, that I may worship the LORD.

And Samuel said unto Saul, I will not return with thee: for thou hast rejected the word of the LORD, and the LORD hath rejected thee from being king over Israel. And as Samuel turned about to go away, he laid hold upon the skirt of his mantle, and it rent. And Samuel said unto him, The LORD hath rent the kingdom of Israel from thee this day, and hath given it to a neighbour of thine, *that is* better than thou. And also the Strength of Israel will not lie nor repent: for he *is* not a man, that he should repent. Then he said, I have sinned: yet honour me now, I pray thee, before the elders of my people, and before Israel, and turn again with me, that I may worship the LORD thy God.

Ahab,

1 Kings 21:27-29. And it came to pass, when Ahab heard those words, that he rent his clothes, and put sackcloth upon his flesh, and fasted, and lay in sackcloth, and went softly. And the word of the LORD came to Elijah the Tishbite, saying, Seest thou how Ahab humbleth himself before me? because he humbleth himself before me, I will not bring the evil in his days: but in his son's days will I bring the evil upon his house.

Judas,

Matthew 27:3-5. Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, Saying, I have Sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? see thou to that. And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.

“Be Converted, that Your Sins May be Blotted Out”

Acts 3:19 Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord;

By God.

1 Kings 18:37. Hear me, O LORD, hear me, that this people may know that thou Art the LORD God, and that thou hast turned their heart back again.

John 6:44. No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.

Acts 21:19. And when he had saluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministry.

By Christ.

Acts 3:26. Unto you first God, having raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.

Romans 15:18. For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed,

By the power of the Holy Ghost.

Proverbs 1:23. Turn you at my reproof: behold, I will pour out my spirit unto you, I will make known my words unto you.

Is of grace.

Acts 11:21. And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number believed, and turned unto the Lord.

Acts 11:23. Who, when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would Cleave Unto the Lord.

Follows repentance.

Acts 3:19. Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your Sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord;

Acts 26:20. But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judaea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance.

Is the result of Faith.

Acts 11:21. And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number believed, and turned unto the Lord.

Through The Instrumentality Of

The scriptures.

Psalms 19:7. The Law of the LORD is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple.

Ministers.

Acts 26:18. To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to Light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of Sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by Faith that is in me.

1 Thessalonians 1:9. For they themselves shew of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from Idols to serve the living and true God;

Self-examination.

Psalms 119:59. I thought on my ways, and turned my feet unto thy testimonies.

Lamentations 3:40. Let us search and try our ways, and turn again to the LORD.

Affliction.

Psalms 78:34. When he slew them, then they sought him: and they returned and inquired early after God.

Of Sinners, A Cause Of Joy.

To God.

Ezekiel 18:23. Have I any pleasure at all that the wicked should die? saith the Lord GOD: and not that he should return from his ways, and live?

Luke 15:32. It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was Dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

To Saints.

Acts 15:3. And being brought on their way by the Church, they passed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles: and they caused great joy unto all the Brethren.

Galatians 1:23-24. But they had heard only, That he which persecuted us in times past now preacheth the Faith which once he destroyed. 24 And they glorified God in me.

Is necessary.

Matthew 18:3. And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the Kingdom of Heaven.

Commanded.

Job 36:10. He openeth also their ear to discipline, and commandeth that they return from iniquity.

Exhortations to.

Proverbs 1:23. Turn you at my reproof: behold, I will pour out my spirit unto you, I will make known my words unto you.

Isaiah 31:6. Turn ye unto him from whom the children of Israel have deeply revolted.

Isaiah 55:7. Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the LORD, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon.

Jeremiah 3:7. And I said after she had done all these things, Turn thou unto me. But she returned not. And her treacherous sister Judah saw it.

Ezekiel 33:11. Say unto them, As I live, saith the Lord GOD, I have no pleasure in the Death of the wicked; but that the wicked turn from his way and live: turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways; for why will ye die, O house of Israel?

Promises connected with.

Nehemiah 1:9. But if ye turn unto me, and keep my commandments, and do them; though there were of you cast out unto the uttermost part of the heaven, yet will I gather them from thence, and will bring them unto the place that I have Chosen to set my name there.

Isaiah 1:27. Zion shall be redeemed with Judgment, and her converts with righteousness.

Jeremiah 3:14. Turn, O backsliding children, saith the LORD; for I am married unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion:

Ezekiel 18:27. Again, when the wicked man turneth away from his wickedness that he hath committed, and doeth that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive.

Pray for.

Psalms 80:7. Turn us again, O God of hosts, and cause thy face to shine; and we shall be saved.

Psalms 85:4. Turn us, O God of our Salvation, and cause thine Anger toward us to cease.

Jeremiah 31:18. I have surely heard Ephraim bemoaning himself thus; Thou hast chastised me, and I was chastised, as a bullock unaccustomed to the yoke: turn thou me, and I shall be turned; for thou Art the LORD my God.

Lamentations 5:21. Turn thou us unto thee, O LORD, and we shall be turned; renew our days as of old.

Is accompanied by Confession of Sin, and Prayer.

1 Kings 8:35. When heaven is shut up, and there is no Rain, because they have Sinned against thee; if they pray toward this place, and Confess thy name, and turn from their Sin, when thou afflictest them:

Danger of neglecting.

Psalms 7:12. If he turn not, he will whet his sword; he hath bent his bow, and made it ready.

Jeremiah 44:5. But they hearkened not, nor inclined their ear to turn from their wickedness, to burn no incense unto other gods.

Jeremiah 44:11. Therefore thus saith the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will set my face against you for evil, and to cut off all Judah.

Duty of leading sinners to.

Psalms 51:13. Then will I Teach transgressors thy ways; and sinners shall be converted unto thee.

Encouragement for leading sinners to.

Daniel 12:3. And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever.

James 5:19-20. Brethren, if any of you do err from the truth, and one convert him; Let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from Death, and shall hide a multitude of Sins.

Of Gentiles, predicted.

Isaiah 2:2. And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the LORDS' house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it.

Isaiah 11:10. And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious.

Isaiah 60:5. Then thou shalt see, and flow together, and thine heart shall fear, and be enlarged; because the Abundance of the sea shall be converted unto thee, the forces of the Gentiles shall come unto thee.

Isaiah 66:12. For thus saith the LORD, Behold, I will extend peace to her like a river, and the glory of the Gentiles like a flowing stream: then shall ye suck, ye shall be borne upon her sides, and be dandled upon her knees.

Of Israel, predicted.

Ezekiel 36:25-27. Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your Idols, will I cleanse you. A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them.

“God be Merciful to Me a Sinner” – Confessing Sin.

Luke 18:10-14. Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men *are*, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified *rather* than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

God requires.

Leviticus 5:5. And it shall be, when he shall be guilty in one of these things, that he shall Confess that he hath Sinned in that thing:

Hosea 5:15. I will go and return to my place, till they acknowledge their offence, and seek my face: in their Affliction they will seek me early.

God regards.

Job 33:27-28. He looketh upon men, and if any say, I have Sinned, and perverted that which was right, and it profited me not; He will deliver his soul from going into the pit, and his life shall see the Light.

Exhortation to.

Joshua 7:19. And Joshua said unto Achan, My son, give, I pray thee, glory to the LORD God of Israel, and make Confession unto him; and tell me now what thou hast done; hide it not from me.

Jeremiah 3:13. Only acknowledge thine iniquity, that thou hast transgressed against the LORD thy God, and hast scattered thy ways to the strangers under every green tree, and ye have not obeyed my voice, saith the LORD.

James 5:16. Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a Righteous man availeth much.

Promises to.

Leviticus 26:40-42. If they shall Confess their iniquity, and the iniquity of their Fathers, with their trespass which they trespassed against me, and that also they have walked contrary unto me; And that I also have walked contrary unto them, and have brought them into the land of their enemies;

if then their uncircumcised hearts be humbled, and they then accept of the punishment of their iniquity: Then will I remember my covenant with Jacob, and also my covenant with Isaac, and also my covenant with Abraham will I remember; and I will remember the land.

Proverbs 28:13. He that covereth his Sins shall not prosper: but whoso Confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy.

Should Be Accompanied With

Submission to punishment.

Leviticus 26:41. And that I also have walked contrary unto them, and have brought them into the land of their enemies; if then their uncircumcised hearts be humbled, and they then accept of the punishment of their iniquity:

Nehemiah 9:33. Howbeit thou Art just in all that is brought upon us; for thou hast done right, but we have done wickedly:

Ezra 9:13. And after all that is come upon us for our evil deeds, and for our great trespass, seeing that thou our God hast Punished us less than our iniquities deserve, and hast given us such deliverance as this;

Prayer for forgiveness.

2 Samuel 24:10. And David's heart smote him after that he had numbered the people. And David said unto the LORD, I have Sinned greatly in that I have done: and now, I Beseech thee, O LORD, take away the iniquity of thy Servant; for I have done very foolishly.

Psalms 25:11. For thy name's sake, O LORD, pardon mine iniquity; for it is great.

Psalms 51:1. Have mercy upon me, O God, according to thy lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions.

Jeremiah 14:7-9. O LORD, though our iniquities testify against us, do thou it for thy name's sake: for our backslidings are many; we have Sinned against thee. O the hope of Israel, the saviour thereof in time of trouble, why shouldest thou be as a stranger in the land, and as a wayfaring man that turneth aside to tarry for a night? Why shouldest thou be as a man Astonied, as a mighty man that cannot save? yet thou, O LORD, Art in the midst of us, and we are called by thy name; leave us not.

Jeremiah 14:20. We acknowledge, O LORD, our wickedness, and the iniquity of our Fathers: for we have Sinned against thee.

Self-Abasement.

Isaiah 64:5-6. Thou meetest him that rejoiceth and worketh righteousness, those that remember thee in thy ways: behold, thou Art wroth; for we have Sinned: in those is continuance, and we shall be saved. But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.

Godly sorrow.

Psalms 38:18. For I will declare mine iniquity; I will be sorry for my Sin.

Lamentations 1:20. Behold, O LORD; for I am in distress: my Bowels are troubled; mine heart is turned within me; for I have grievously rebelled: abroad the sword bereaveth, at home there is as Death.

Forsaking Sin.

Proverbs 28:13 He that covereth his Sins shall not prosper: but whoso Confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy.

Restitution.

Numbers 5:6-7 Speak unto the children of Israel, When a man or woman shall commit any Sin that men commit, to do a trespass against the LORD, and that person be guilty; Then they shall Confess their Sin which they have done: and he shall recompense his trespass with the principal thereof, and add unto it the fifth part thereof, and give it unto him against whom he hath trespassed.

Should be full and unreserved.

Psalms 32:5 I acknowledged my Sin unto thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will Confess my transgressions unto the LORD; and thou forgavest the iniquity of my Sin. Selah.

Psalms 51:3 For I acknowledge my transgressions: and my Sin is ever before me.

Psalm 106:6 We have sinned with our fathers, we have committed iniquity, we have done wickedly.

Followed by pardon.

Psalm 32:5 I acknowledged my Sin unto thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will Confess my transgressions unto the LORD; and thou forgavest the iniquity of my Sin. Selah.

1 John 1:9 If we Confess our Sins, he is Faithful and just to forgive us our Sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

Illustrated.

Luke 15:21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.

Luke 18:13 And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.

Exemplified.

Aaron,

Numbers 12:11 And Aaron said unto Moses, Alas, my lord, I Beseech thee, lay not the Sin upon us, wherein we have done foolishly, and wherein we have Sinned.

Israelites,

Numbers 21:6-7 And the LORD sent fiery serpents among the people, and they bit the people; and much people of Israel died. Therefore the people came to Moses, and said, We have Sinned, for we have spoken against the LORD, and against thee; pray unto the LORD, that he take away the serpents from us. And Moses prayed for the people.

1 Samuel 7:6 And they gathered together to Mizpeh, and drew water, and poured it out before the LORD, and fasted on that day, and said there, We have Sinned against the LORD. And Samuel judged the children of Israel in Mizpeh.

1 Samuel 12:19 And all the people said unto Samuel, Pray for thy servants unto the LORD thy God, that we die not: for we have added unto all our Sins this evil, to ask us a king.

Saul,

1 Samuel 15:24 And Saul said unto Samuel, I have Sinned: for I have transgressed the commandment of the LORD, and thy words: because I feared the people, and obeyed their voice.

David,

2 Samuel 24:10 And David's heart smote him after that he had numbered the people. And David said unto the LORD, I have Sinned greatly in that I have done: and now, I Beseech thee, O LORD, take away the iniquity of thy Servant; for I have done very foolishly.

Ezra,

Ezra 9:6 And said, O my God, I am ashamed and blush to lift up my face to thee, my God: for our iniquities are increased over our head, and our trespass is grown up unto the heavens.

Nehemiah,

Nehemiah 1:6-7 Let thine ear now be attentive, and thine eyes open, that thou mayest hear the prayer of thy Servant, which I pray before thee now, day and night, for the children of Israel thy servants, and Confess the Sins of the children of Israel, which we have Sinned against thee: both I and my Father's house have Sinned. We have dealt very corruptly against thee, and have not kept the commandments, nor the statutes, nor the judgments, which thou commandedst thy Servant Moses.

Levites,

Nehemiah 9:4 Then stood up upon the stairs, of the Levites, Jeshua, and Bani, Kadmiel, Shebaniah, Bunni, Sherebiah, Bani, and Chenani, and cried with a loud voice unto the LORD their God.

Nehemiah 9:33-34 Howbeit thou Art just in all that is brought upon us; for thou hast done right, but we have done wickedly: Neither have our kings, our Princes, our priests, nor our Fathers, kept thy law, nor hearkened unto thy commandments and thy testimonies, wherewith thou didst testify against them.

Job,

Job 7:20 I have Sinned; what shall I do unto thee, O thou preserver of men? why hast thou set me as a mark against thee, so that I am a burden to myself?

Daniel,

Daniel 9:4 And I prayed unto the LORD my God, and made my Confession, and said, O Lord, the great and dreadful God, keeping the covenant and mercy to them that love him, and to them that keep his commandments;

Peter,

Luke 5:8 When Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord.

Thief,

Luke 23:41 And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing Amiss.

“In the Name of Jesus Christ,” – Confessing Christ.

Influences of the Holy Spirit necessary to.

1 Corinthians 12:3. Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost.

1 John 4:2. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that [Confesseth] that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God:

A test of being Saints.

1 John 2:23. Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: (but) he that acknowledgeth the Son hath the Father also.

1 John 4:2-3. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that [Confesseth] that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that [Confesseth] not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of Antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.

Evidence of union with God.

1 John 4:15. Whosoever shall Confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

Necessary to Salvation.

Romans 10:9-10. That if thou shalt Confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the Dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth Confession is made unto Salvation.

Ensures His confessing us.

Matthew 10:32. Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven.

The fear of man prevents.

John 7:13. Howbeit no man spake openly of him for fear of the Jews.

John 12:42-43. Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not Confess him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue: For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

Persecution should not prevent us from.

Mark 8:35. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospel's, the same shall save it.

2 Timothy 2:12. If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us:

Must be connected with Faith.

Romans 10:9. That if thou shalt Confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the Dead, thou shalt be saved.

Consequences of not.

Matthew 10:33. But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

Exemplified.

Nathanael,

John 1:49. Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou Art the Son of God; thou Art the King of Israel.

Peter,

John 6:68-69. Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of Eternal Life. And we believe and are sure that thou Art that Christ, the Son of the living God.

Man born blind,

John 9:25. He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see.

John 9:33. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

Martha,

John 11:27. She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe that thou Art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.

Peter and John,

Acts 4:7-12. And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, By what power, or by what name, have ye done this? Then Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel, If we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole; Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, *even* by him doth this man stand here before you whole. This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner. Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

Apostles,

Acts 5:29-32. Then Peter and the other Apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men. The God of our Fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree. Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of Sins. And we are his witnesses of these things; and so is also the Holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him.

Acts 5:42. And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to Teach and preach Jesus Christ.

Stephen,

Acts 7:52. Which of the Prophets have not your Fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of the Just One; of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers:

Acts 7:59. And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.

Paul,

Acts 9:29. And he spake boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.

Timothy,

1 Timothy 6:12. Fight the good fight of Faith, lay hold on Eternal Life, whereunto thou Art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

John,

Revelation 1:9. I John, who also am your brother, and companion in Tribulation, and in the kingdom and Patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.

Church in Pergamos,

Revelation 2:13. I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's Seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my Faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my Faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

Martyrs,

Revelation 20:4. And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and Judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the Witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

“Be Baptized Every one of You,” – Baptism.

As Administered By John.

Matthew 3:5-12. Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judaea, and all the region round about Jordan, And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins. But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to *our* father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. **I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance:** but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: **he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost,** and *with* fire: Whose fan *is* in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

John 3:23. And John also was baptizing in AEnon near to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized.

Acts 13:24. When John had first preached before his coming **the baptism of repentance** to all the people of Israel.

Acts 19:4. Then said Paul, **John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance**, saying unto the people, that **they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.**

Christ's Example.

Matthew 3:13-15. Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him. But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

Luke 3:21. Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass, that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened,

Adopted By Christ.

John 3:22. After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judaea; and there he tarried with them, and baptized.

John 4:1-2. When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John, (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,)

Jesus Christ Commanded To Be Baptized

Matthew 28:19-20. Go ye therefore, and **Teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you:** and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

Peter Commanded To Be Baptized

Acts 10:47-48. Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we? And **he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord.** Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.

Acts 11:16. Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how that he said, **John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost.**

Acts 16:15. And when she was baptized, and her household, she besought *us*, saying, If ye have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house, and abide *there*. And she constrained us.

Acts 16:33. And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed *their* stripes; and was baptized, he and all his, straightway.

Acts 18:8. And Crispus, the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house; and many of **the Corinthians hearing believed, and were baptized.**

Paul Commanded To Be Baptized

Acts 19:3-5. And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's baptism. Then said Paul, **John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.**

In The Name of the Father, The Son, and the Holy Ghost.

Matthew 28:19. Go ye therefore, and Teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:

Acts 1:5. **For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.**

Acts 11:15-18. And as I began to speak, the Holy Ghost fell on them, *as on us at the beginning*. Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how that he said, **John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost.** Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as *he did* unto us, **who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ;** what was I, that I could withstand God? When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, **Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.**

In The Name of Jesus Christ

Acts 19:5. When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

They That Gladly Received Peter's Words Were Baptized

Acts 2:41. Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added *unto them* about three thousand souls.

Immediately Upon Hearing & Believing the Gospel

Acts 16:31-34. And they said, **Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.** And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house. And **he took them the same hour of the night**, and washed *their* stripes; **and was baptized, he and all his, straightway.** And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, **believing in God with all his house.**

"Much Water," The Outward and Visible Sign In.

1 Corinthians 10:2. And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud **and in the sea;**

John 3:23. And John also was baptizing in AEnon near to Salim, **because there was much water there:** and they came, and were baptized.

Acts 8:36-39. And as they went on *their* way, **they came unto a certain water:** and the eunuch said, See, *here is* water; what doth hinder me to be baptized? And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and **they went down both into the water**, both Philip and the eunuch; and **he baptized him.** And **when they were come up out of the water**, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.

Acts 10:47. **Can any man forbid water**, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we?

Regeneration, The Inward And Spiritual Grace Of.

John 3:3. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of God.

John 3:5-6. Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

Titus 3:5-7. Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy **he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost**; Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

Faith Necessary To.

Acts 8:36-38. And as they went on *their* way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, **See, here is water; what doth hinder me to be baptized? And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.** And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.

Acts 18:8. And Crispus, the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house; and many of the Corinthians hearing believed, and were baptized.

Acts 19:4-5. Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that **they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.** **When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.**

Confession Of Sin Necessary To.

Matthew 3:6. And were **baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.**

Repentance Necessary To.

Acts 2:38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Remission Of Sins, Signified By.

Acts 2:38. Then Peter said unto them, **Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins**, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Acts 22:16. And now why tarriest thou? arise, and **be baptized, and wash away thy sins**, calling on the name of the Lord.

Ephesians 5:26. That he might sanctify and cleanse it **with the washing of water** by the word,

There Is but One.

Ephesians 4:5. One Lord, one Faith, one baptism,

Rebaptism Necessary, When the Gospel is not Understood, During the First

Acts 19:3-5. And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's baptism. Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

Acts 22:16. And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the name of the Lord.

ADMINISTERED TO

Individuals.

Acts 8:38. And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.

Acts 9:18. And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales: and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

Households.

Acts 16:15. And when she was baptized, and her household, she Besought us, saying, If ye have judged me to be Faithful to the Lord, come into my house, and abide there. And she constrained us.

1 Corinthians 1:16. And I baptized also the household of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

John's Baptism Was unto Repentance.

Matthew 3:11. I indeed Baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall Baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire:

Acts 19:3-5. And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's baptism. Then said Paul, **John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance**, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

Baptism is for the Remission of Sins, and the Gift of the Holy Ghost.

Acts 2:38-39. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ **for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.**

The Believer is Sealed Immediately after Baptism, by the Holy Ghost.

Ephesians 1:13. In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also **after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,**

Ephesians 4:30. And grieve not **the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.**

Unites With Christ's Death, Burial & Resurrection.

Romans 6:3-4. Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

Colossians 2:12. Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with *him* through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

Unites With Christ's Body, The Church.

1 Corinthians 12:13. For **by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body**, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.

Is How Believers Put On Christ.

Galatians 3:27-28. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

Genesis 3:21. Unto Adam also and to his wife did the LORD God make coats of skins, and clothed them.

Job 29:14. I put on righteousness, and it clothed me: my judgment *was* as a robe and a diadem.

Isaiah 61:10. I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh *himself* with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth *herself* with her jewels.

A Man Which had not on a Wedding Garment.

Matthew 22:11-14. And when the king came in to see the guests, **he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment:** And he saith unto him, **Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment?** And he was speechless. Then said the king to the servants, **Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast *him* into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.** For many are called, but few *are* chosen.

Conducted In Different Houses, Doesn't Divide the Church into Separate Denominations.

1 Corinthians 1:13-17. Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or **were ye baptized in the name of Paul?** I thank God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius; **Lest any should say that I had baptized in mine own name.** And I baptized also the household of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other. For **Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel:** not with wisdom of words, **lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect.**

Galatians 3:27-28. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

Baptism Into Christ's Death Has Set Us Free from the Law

Romans 7:1-4. Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth? For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to *her* husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of *her* husband. So then if, while *her* husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be

called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man. **Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.**

Replaced Circumcision as the Seal Of The New Covenant

Colossians 2:11-13. In whom also **ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: Buried with him in baptism**, wherein also ye are risen with *him* through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, ***hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses.***

One Baptism Vs. When Rebaptism Is Necessary.

Ephesians 4:5. states that there is one Lord, one faith, one baptism, and yet **Acts 19** demonstrates that when a correct understanding of the gospel is not present, a rebaptism is necessary,

The Thief on the Cross.

The thief on the cross demonstrates that faith in Jesus Christ is sufficient to save in extremely rare cases when baptism is impossible. However, it is a misinterpretation when someone uses this isolated and very rare circumstance that prevented the thief from being baptized as an excuse to not be baptized by somebody who is able to be baptized. Anyone who foolishly uses this example as a legal loophole or technicality to downplay the importance of baptism and avoid being baptized should be warned that there is no excuse for refusing to obey Christ's commandment to be baptized when you are able to be baptized. If a miracle had set the thief on the cross free, you can be certain that he would have been baptized.

Baptism is Obedience to the Gospel Motivated by Love to Jesus Christ

Baptism Is Not "Salvation by Works."

Mark 16:16. **He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved;** but he that believeth not shall be damned.

John 14:23-24. Jesus answered and said unto him, **If a man love me, he will keep my words:** and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

Matthew 7:24-25. **Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: And the rain descended, and the**

floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock.

All Who Refuse to Obey the Gospel Perish.

Mark 16:16. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but **he that believeth not shall be damned.**

John 14:24. **He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings:** and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.

Matthew 7:26-27. And **every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand:** And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.

2 Thessalonians 1:8. In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ:

1 Peter 4:17. For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?

Baptism "Saves."

In like Figure as the Ark "Saved" From the Flood.

1 Peter 3:20-21. Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, **eight souls were saved by water.** **The like figure whereunto even baptism doth also now save us** (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good Conscience toward God,) by The Resurrection of Jesus Christ:

Mark 16:16. **He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved;** but he that believeth not shall be damned.

The death of Jesus on the Cross saves from sin, Baptism is the sign that unites the repentant believer into Christ's death. Romans 6:1-4. Upon Baptism the believer receives the Holy Ghost, by which he is sealed unto the day of redemption.

The thief on the cross demonstrates that when circumstances make Baptism utterly impossible, Christ will redeem and rejoice with that person in Paradise. However when Baptism is possible, and it is refused, there is no forgiveness of sins. Such refusal is deemed unbelief and denial of Christ.

Baptism Did Not Save the Unrepentant Simon Magus.

Simon Magus Believed And Was Baptized.

Acts 8:12. But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women. Then **Simon himself believed also: and when he was baptized**, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signs which were done.

Simon Magus Had Not Received The Holy Ghost

Acts 8:16. (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.)

Why Not? Simon Magus Had Not Repented,

Faith and baptism in the name of the Lord did not save him. The water did not impart any supernatural powers or graces to Simon Magus. without repentance, Simon Magus was still in the gall of bitterness and in the bond of iniquity.

Acts 8:14-25. Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John: Who, when they were come down, prayed for them, **that they might receive the Holy Ghost: (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.)** Then laid they *their* hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost. And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost. But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money. Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter: for thy heart is not right in the sight of God. **Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee. For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitterness, and *in* the bond of iniquity.** Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye have spoken come upon me. And they, when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem, and preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritans.

Acts 8:36. And as they went on *their* way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, *here is* water; what doth hinder me to be baptized?

Acts 8:38. And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.

Acts 9:18. And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales: and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

Typified.

1 Corinthians 10:2. And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea;

“For the Remission of Sins” – Forgiveness.

What Happens to the Believer’s Future Sins, is the Big Question that Divide Christendom?

Believer’s Sins are Forgiven, they are not “Imputed” (Not Recorded)

- Past sins are forgiven.
- Future sins are not “imputed” (not recorded).

If thou, LORD, shouldest mark iniquities.

Job 25:4. How then can man be justified with God? or how can he be clean that is born of a woman?

Psalms 130:3. If thou, LORD, shouldest mark iniquities, O Lord, who shall stand?

Psalms 143:2. And enter not into Judgment with thy Servant: for in thy sight shall no man living be justified.

Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.

Romans 4:4-8. Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness. Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom **God imputeth righteousness without works**, *Saying*, Blessed *are* they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. **Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.**

Not imputing their trespasses unto them.

2 Corinthians 5:17-21. Therefore if any man *be* in Christ, *he is* a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. and all things *are* of **God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation**; To wit, that **God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them**; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech *you* by us: **we pray you in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God**. For he hath made him *to be* sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

This is as the waters of Noah unto me:

Isaiah 54:9-10. For this *is as* the waters of Noah unto me: for *as* I have sworn that the waters of Noah should no more go over the earth; so have I sworn that I would not be wroth with thee, nor rebuke thee. For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but my kindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed, saith the LORD that hath mercy on thee.

Love keeps no record of being wronged.

1 Corinthians 13:4-5. (NLT) Love is patient and kind. Love is not jealous or boastful or proud or rude. It does not demand its own way. It is not irritable, and it **keeps no record of being wronged.**

1 John 4:7-8. Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. He that loveth not knoweth not God; for **GOD IS LOVE.**

I will make an everlasting covenant with you, even the sure mercies of David.

Isaiah 55:1-3. Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters, and he that hath no money; come ye, buy, and eat; yea, come, buy wine and milk without money and without price. Wherefore do ye spend money for *that which is* not bread? and your labour for *that which* satisfieth not? hearken diligently unto me, and eat ye *that which is* good, and let your soul delight itself in fatness. Incline your ear, and come unto me: hear, and your soul shall live; and **I will make an everlasting covenant with you, even the sure mercies of David.**

He shall bear their iniquities.

Isaiah 53:10-12. Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he hath put *him* to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see *his* seed, he shall prolong *his* days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand. He shall see of the travail of his soul, *and* shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for **he shall bear their iniquities.** Therefore will I divide him *a portion* with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and **he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.**

If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine account.

Philemon 18-19. If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine account; I Paul have written *it* with mine own hand, I will repay *it*: albeit I do not say to thee how thou owest unto me even thine own self besides.

Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree.

1 Peter 2:24. Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: **by whose stripes ye were healed.**

Christ also hath once suffered for sins.

1 Peter 3:18. For **Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God,** being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:

The Blood Of Jesus Christ His Son Cleanseth Us From All Sin.

1 John 1:7-9. But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and **the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.** If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. **If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.**

Your Sins Are Forgiven.

1 John 2:12. I write unto you, little children, because **your sins are forgiven** you for his name's sake.

Whosoever Believeth In Him Shall Receive Remission Of Sins.

Acts 10:43. To him give all the prophets witness, that **through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins.**

Through Jesus Is Preached Unto You The Forgiveness Of Sins.

Acts 13:38. Be it known unto you therefore, men *and* brethren, that **through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins:**

All That Believe Are Justified From All Things.

Acts 13:39. And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.

That Your Sins May Be Blotted Out.

Acts 3:19. Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord;

We Have The Forgiveness Of Sins.

Colossians 1:14. In whom we have redemption through his blood, *even* the forgiveness of sins:

Having Forgiven You All Trespasses.

Colossians 2:13-14. and you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross.

To The Lord Our God Belong Mercies and Forgivenesses.

Daniel 9:9. To the Lord our God *belong* mercies and forgivenesses, though we have rebelled against him.

We Have Redemption Through His Blood.

Ephesians 1:6-8. To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence.

By Grace are ye Saved Through Faith.

Ephesians 2:4-9. But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) and hath raised *us* up together, and made *us* sit together in heavenly *places* in Christ Jesus: That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in *his* kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. **For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.**

Forgiving Iniquity and Transgression and Sin.

Exodus 34:6-7. and the LORD passed by before him, and proclaimed, The LORD, The LORD God, merciful and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness and truth, Keeping mercy for thousands, **forgiving iniquity and transgression and sin**, and that will by no means clear *the guilty*; visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children's children, unto the third and to the fourth *generation*.

He Had By Himself Purged Our Sins.

Hebrews 1:3. Who being the brightness of *his* glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, **when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down** on the right hand of the Majesty on high.

Their Sins and Iniquities Will I Remember No More.

Hebrews 10:17. And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.

Hebrews 8:12. For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and **their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.**

He Obtained Eternal Redemption For Us.

Hebrews 9:12. Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but **by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.**

The Blood Of Christ, Purges The Conscience.

Hebrews 9:14. How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, **purge your conscience from dead works** to serve the living God?

Though Your Sins Be As Scarlet.

Isaiah 1:18. Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: **though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.**

The People Shall Be Forgiven Their Iniquity.

Isaiah 33:24. and the inhabitant shall not say, I am sick: the people that dwell therein *shall be* forgiven *their* iniquity.

The Lord Will Not Remember Thy Sins.

Isaiah 43:25. I, *even I, am* he that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins.

I Have Blotted Out, As A Thick Cloud, Thy Transgressions.

Isaiah 44:22. I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and, as a cloud, thy sins: return unto me; for I have redeemed thee.

Seek Ye The Lord While He May Be Found.

Isaiah 55:6-11. Seek ye the LORD while he may be found, call ye upon him while he is near: Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the LORD, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon. For my thoughts *are* not your thoughts, neither *are* your ways my ways, saith the LORD. For *as* the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts. For as the rain cometh down, and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater: So shall my word be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper *in the thing* whereto I sent it.

I Will Remember Their Sin No More.

Jeremiah 31:34. And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for **I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.**

I Will Cleanse Them From All Their Iniquity.

Jeremiah 33:8. And **I will cleanse them from all their iniquity**, whereby they have sinned against me; and **I will pardon all their iniquities**, whereby they have sinned, and whereby they have transgressed against me.

I Will Pardon Them.

Jeremiah 50:20. In those days, and in that time, saith the LORD, the iniquity of Israel shall be sought for, and *there shall be* none; and the sins of Judah, and they shall not be found: for **I will pardon them** whom I reserve.

Thou Art A Gracious God, and Merciful.

Jonah 4:2. And he prayed unto the LORD, and said, I pray thee, O LORD, *was* not this my saying, when I was yet in my country? Therefore I fled before unto Tarshish: for I knew that thou *art* a gracious God, and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repentest thee of the evil.

Ye May Be Clean From All Your Sins.

Leviticus 16:30. For on that day shall **the priest make an atonement for you, to cleanse you, that ye may be clean from all your sins before the LORD.**

Romans 5:11. And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom **we have now received the atonement.**

The Remission Of Their Sins.

Luke 1:77. To give knowledge of salvation unto his people by the remission of their sins,

Remission Of Sins Should Be Preached In His Name.

Luke 24:47. **And** that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

He Shall Save His People From Their Sins.

Matthew 1:21. And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

God Delighteth In Mercy.

Micah 7:18-19. Who *is* a God like unto thee, that pardoneth iniquity, and passeth by the transgression of the remnant of his heritage? he retaineth not his anger for ever, because he delighteth *in* mercy. He will turn again, he will have compassion upon us; he will subdue our iniquities; and thou wilt cast all their sins into the depths of the sea.

Thou Art A God Ready To Pardon.

Nehemiah 9:17. And refused to obey, neither were mindful of thy wonders that thou didst among them; but hardened their necks, and in their rebellion appointed a captain to return to their bondage: but **thou art a God ready to pardon, gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and forsookest them not.**

Who Forgiveth All Thine Iniquities.

Psalms 103:2-4. Bless the LORD, O my soul, and forget not all his benefits: Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases; Who redeemeth thy life from destruction; who crowneth thee with lovingkindness and tender mercies;

As The East Is From The West.

Psalms 103:12. As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us.

The Lord Is Merciful and Gracious.

Psalm 103:7-8. He made known his ways unto Moses, his acts unto the children of Israel. The LORD *is* merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and plenteous in mercy.

Blessed Is He Whose Transgression Is Forgiven.

Psalm 32:1. *A Psalm of David, Maschil.* Blessed *is he* whose transgression *is* forgiven, whose sin *is* covered.

Blot Out My Transgressions.

Psalm 51:1. Have mercy upon me, O God, according to thy lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of thy tender mercies blot out my transgressions.

Create In Me A Clean Heart.

Psalm 51:9-13. Hide thy face from my sins, and blot out all mine iniquities. Create in me a clean heart, O God; and renew a right spirit within me. Cast me not away from thy presence; and take not thy holy spirit from me. Restore unto me the joy of thy salvation; and uphold me *with thy* free spirit. *Then* will I teach transgressors thy ways; and sinners shall be converted unto thee.

As For Our Transgressions, Thou Shalt Purge Them Away.

Psalm 65:3. Iniquities prevail against me: *as for* our transgressions, thou shalt purge them away.

O Lord, Art A God Full Of Compassion.

Psalm 86:15-16. But thou, O Lord, *art* a God full of compassion, and gracious, longsuffering, and plenteous in mercy and truth. O turn unto me, and have mercy upon me; give thy strength unto thy servant, and save the son of thine handmaid.

Thou, Lord, Art Good, and Ready To Forgive

Psalm 86:5. For thou, Lord, *art* good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon thee.

Jesus Loved Us and Washed Us from Our Sins.

Revelation 1:5. and from Jesus Christ, *who is* the faithful witness, *and* the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,

Revelation 7:14. and I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. and he said to me, **These are they which** came out of great tribulation, and **have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.**

There Shall Come Out Of Sion The Deliverer.

Romans 11:26. And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob:

I Shall Take Away Their Sins.

Romans 11:27. For this *is* my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins.

Where Sin Abounded, Grace Did Much More Abound.

Romans 5:20. Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound:

There Shall Be A Fountain Opened To The House Of David.

Zechariah 13:1. In that day there shall be a fountain opened to the house of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness.

“Ye Shall Receive the Gift of the Holy Ghost”

By the Father.

Nehemiah 9:20. Thou gavest also thy good spirit to instruct them, and withheldest not thy manna from their mouth, and gavest them water for their thirst.

Luke 11:13. If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

By the Son.

John 20:22. And when he had said this, he breathed on *them*, and saith unto them, **Receive ye the Holy Ghost:**

To Christ without measure.

John 3:34. For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him.

GIVEN

Upon Baptism

Acts 2:38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

According to promise.

Acts 2:38-39. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.

Upon the exaltation of Christ.

Psalms 68:18. Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive: thou hast received gifts for men; yea, for the rebellious also, that the LORD God might dwell among them.

John 7:39. (But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)

Through the intercession of Christ.

John 14:16. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;

In answer to prayer.

Luke 11:13. If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

Ephesians 1:16-17. Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers; That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him:

For instruction.

Nehemiah 9:20. Thou gavest also thy good spirit to instruct them, and withheldest not thy manna from their mouth, and gavest them water for their thirst.

For comfort of Saints.

John 14:16. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;

To those who repent and believe.

Acts 2:38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

To those who obey God.

Acts 5:32. And we are his witnesses of these things; and so is also the Holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him.

To the Gentiles.

Acts 10:44. While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

Acts 11:17. Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as he did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ; what was I, that I could withstand God?

Acts 15:8. And God, which knoweth the hearts, bare them witness, giving them the Holy Ghost, even as he did unto us;

Is abundant.

Psalms 68:9. Thou, O God, didst send a plentiful rain, whereby thou didst confirm thine inheritance, when it was weary.

John 7:38-39. He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. (But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet *given*; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)

Is permanent.

Isaiah 59:21. As for me, this is my covenant with them, saith the LORD; My spirit that is upon thee, and my words which I have put in thy mouth, shall not depart out of thy mouth, nor out of the mouth of thy seed, nor out of the mouth of thy seed's seed, saith the LORD, from henceforth and for ever.

Haggai 2:5. According to the word that I covenanted with you when ye came out of Egypt, so my spirit remaineth among you: fear ye not.

1 Peter 4:14. If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye; for the spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

Is fructifying.

Isaiah 32:15. Until the spirit be poured upon us from on high, and the wilderness be a fruitful field, and the fruitful field be counted for a forest.

Received through Faith.

Galatians 3:14. That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

An evidence of union with Christ.

1 John 3:24. And he that keepeth his commandments dwelleth in him, and he in him. And hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

1 John 4:13. Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

An earnest (down payment) of the inheritance of the Saints.

2 Corinthians 1:22. Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

2 Corinthians 5:5. Now he that hath wrought us for the selfsame thing is God, who also hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit.

Ephesians 1:14. Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.

A pledge of the continued favor of God.

Ezekiel 39:29. Neither will I hide my face any more from them: for I have poured out my spirit upon the house of Israel, saith the Lord GOD.

“Baptism with the Holy Ghost.”

Foretold.

Ezekiel 36:25. Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you.

Is through Christ.

Titus 3:6. Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour;

Christ administered.

Matthew 3:11. I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire:

John 1:33. And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the Holy Ghost.

Promised to Saints Upon Water Baptism.

Acts 1:5. For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.

Acts 2:38. Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Acts 11:16. Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how that he said, John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost.

All Saints partake of.

1 Corinthians 12:13. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.

Necessity for.

John 3:5. Jesus answered, **Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.**

Acts 19:2-6. He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost. And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's baptism. Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

Renews and cleanses the soul.

Titus 3:5. Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

1 Peter 3:20-21. Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water. The like figure whereunto even baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ:

The Word of God instrumental to.

Acts 10:44. While Peter yet spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

Ephesians 5:26. That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word,

Typified.

Acts 2:1-4. And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

“Ye Were Sealed with that Holy Spirit of Promise.”

Christ received.

John 6:27. Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed.

Saints receive.

2 Corinthians 1:22. Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

Ephesians 1:13. In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, **ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,**

Is unto the day of redemption.

Ephesians 4:30. And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

The wicked do not receive.

Revelation 9:4. And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads.

Judgment suspended until all Saints receive.

Revelation 7:3. Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.

Typified.

Romans 4:11. And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also:

“Except a Man be Born of Water and of the Spirit.”

The New Birth.

The corruption of human nature requires.

John 3:6. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

Romans 8:7-8. Because the Carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to The Law of God, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

None can enter heaven without.

John 3:3. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of God.

Effected By.

God.

John 1:13. Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

1 Peter 1:3. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by The Resurrection of Jesus Christ from the Dead,

Christ.

1 John 2:29. If ye know that he is Righteous, ye know that every one that doeth righteousness is born of him.

The Holy Ghost.

John 3:6. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

Titus 3:5. Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

Through the Instrumentality Of.

The word of God.

James 1:18 Of his own will Begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures.

1 Peter 1:23. Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.

The resurrection of Christ.

1 Peter 1:3. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by The Resurrection of Jesus Christ from the Dead,

The ministry of the Gospel.

1 Corinthians 4:15. For though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet have ye not many Fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the Gospel.

Is of the will of God.

James 1:18. Of his own will Begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of firstfruits of his creatures.

Is of the mercy of God.

Titus 3:5. Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

Is for the glory of God.

Isaiah 43:7. Even every one that is called by my name: for I have created him for my glory, I have formed him; yea, I have made him.

Described As.

A new creation.

2 Corinthians 5:17. Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

Galatians 6:15. For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

Ephesians 2:10. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

Newness of life.

Romans 6:4. Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into Death: that like as Christ was raised up from the Dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

A spiritual resurrection.

Romans 6:4-6. Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into Death: that like as Christ was raised up from the Dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his Death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of Sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve Sin.

Ephesians 2:1. And you hath he quickened, who were Dead in trespasses and Sins;

Ephesians 2:5. Even when we were Dead in Sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)

A new heart.

Ezekiel 36:26. A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.

A new spirit.

Ezekiel 11:19. And I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you; and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh, and will give them an heart of flesh:

Romans 7:6. But now we are delivered from The Law, that being Dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.

Putting on the new man.

Ephesians 4:24. And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

The inward man.

Romans 7:22. For I delight in The Law of God after the inward man:

2 Corinthians 4:16. For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

Circumcision of the heart.

Deuteronomy 30:6. And the LORD thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live.

Romans 2:29. But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

Colossians 2:11. In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the Sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ:

Partaking of the divine nature.

2 Peter 1:4. Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

The washing of regeneration.

Titus 3:5. Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

All Saints partake of.

Romans 8:16-17. The Spirit itself beareth Witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God: And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

1 Peter 2:2. As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:

1 John 5:1. Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and every one that loveth him that Begat loveth him also that is begotten of him.

Produces.

Likeness to God.

Ephesians 4:24. And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

Colossians 3:10. And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him:

Likeness to Christ.

Romans 8:29. For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many Brethren.

2 Corinthians 3:18. But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.

1 John 3:2. Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.

Knowledge of God.

Jeremiah 24:7. And I will give them an heart to know me, that I am the LORD: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God: for they shall return unto me with their whole heart.

Colossians 3:10. And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him:

Hatred of Sin.

1 John 3:9. Whosoever is born of God doth not commit Sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot Sin, because he is born of God.

1 John 5:18. We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

Victory over the world.

1 John 5:4. For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our Faith.

Delight in God's law.

Romans 7:22. For I delight in The Law of God after the inward man:

Evidenced By.

Faith in Christ.

1 John 5:1. Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and every one that loveth him that Begat loveth him also that is begotten of him.

Righteousness.

1 John 2:29. If ye know that he is Righteous, ye know that every one that doeth righteousness is born of him.

Brotherly love.

1 John 4:7. Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God.

Connected with Adoption.

Isaiah 43:6-7. I will say to the north, Give up; and to the south, Keep not back: bring my sons from far, and my daughters from the ends of the earth; Even every one that is called by my name: for I have created him for my glory, I have formed him; yea, I have made him.

The ignorant cavil at.

John 3:4. Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?

Manner of effecting Illustrated.

John 3:8. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

Preserves from Satan's devices.

1 John 5:18. We know that whosoever is born of God Sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

Justification Before God

Promised in Christ.

Isaiah 45:25. In the LORD shall all the seed of Israel be justified, and shall glory.

Isaiah 53:11. He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my Righteous Servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities.

Is the act of God.

Isaiah 50:8. He is near that justifieth me; who will contend with me? let us stand together: who is mine adversary? let him come near to me.

Romans 8:33. Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth.

UNDER The Law

Requires perfect obedience.

Leviticus 18:5. Ye shall therefore keep my statutes, and my judgments: which if a man do, he shall live in them: I am the LORD.

Romans 10:5. For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of The Law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them.

Romans 2:13. (For not the hearers of The Law are just before God, but the doers of The Law shall be justified.

James 2:10. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

Man cannot attain to.

Job 9:2-3. I know it is so of a truth: but how should man be just with God? If he will contend with him, he cannot answer him one of a thousand.

Job 25:4. How then can man be justified with God? or how can he be clean that is born of a woman?

Psalms 130:3. If thou, LORD, shouldest mark iniquities, O Lord, who shall stand?

Psalms 143:2. And enter not into Judgment with thy Servant: for in thy sight shall no man living be justified.

Romans 3:20. Therefore by the deeds of the Law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by The Law is the knowledge of Sin.

Romans 9:31-32. But Israel, which followed after the Law of righteousness, hath not attained to The Law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because they sought it not by Faith, but as it were by the works of The Law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone;

Under the Gospel.

Is not of works.

Acts 13:39. And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by The Law of Moses.

Romans 8:3. For what The Law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for Sin, condemned Sin in the flesh:

Galatians 2:16. Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of The Law, but by the Faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the works of The Law: for by the works of The Law shall no flesh be justified.

Galatians 3:11. But that no man is justified by The Law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by Faith.

Is not of Faith and works united.

Acts 15:1-29. And certain men which came down from Judaea taught the Brethren, and said, Except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved. When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and disputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of them, should go up to Jerusalem unto the Apostles and elders about this question. And being brought on their way by the Church, they passed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles: and they caused great joy unto all the Brethren. And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received of the Church, and of the Apostles and elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them. ...

Romans 3:28. Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by Faith without the deeds of The Law.

Romans 11:6. And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.

Galatians 2:14-21. But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the Gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews? We who are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles, Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of The

Law, but by the Faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the works of The Law: for by the works of The Law shall no flesh be justified. But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of Sin? God forbid. ...

Galatians 5:4. Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by The Law; ye are fallen from grace.

Is by Faith alone.

John 5:24. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from Death unto life.

Acts 13:39. And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by The Law of Moses.

Romans 3:30. Seeing it is one God, which shall justify the circumcision by Faith, and uncircumcision through Faith.

Romans 5:1. Therefore being justified by Faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

Galatians 2:16. Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of The Law, but by the Faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the works of The Law: for by the works of The Law shall no flesh be justified.

Is of grace.

Romans 3:24. Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:

Romans 4:16. Therefore it is of Faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of The Law, but to that also which is of the Faith of Abraham; who is the Father of us all,

Romans 5:17-21. For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.) Therefore as by the offence of one *judgment came* upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one *the free gift came* upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous. Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound: That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord.

In the name of Christ.

1 Corinthians 6:11. And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

By imputation of Christ's righteousness.

Isaiah 61:10. I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of Salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh himself with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth herself with her jewels.

Jeremiah 23:6. In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is his name whereby he shall be called, **THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS.**

Romans 3:22. Even the righteousness of God which is by Faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference:

Romans 5:18. Therefore as by the offence of one Judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.

1 Corinthians 1:30. But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:

2 Corinthians 5:21. For he hath made him to be Sin for us, who knew no Sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

By the blood of Christ.

Romans 5:9. Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.

By the resurrection of Christ.

Romans 4:25. Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.

1 Corinthians 15:17. And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your Sins.

Blessedness of.

Psalms 32:1-2. Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose Sin is covered. Blessed is the man unto whom the LORD imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile.

Frees from condemnation.

Isaiah 50:8. He is near that justifieth me; who will contend with me? let us stand together: who is mine adversary? let him come near to me.

Isaiah 54:17. No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in Judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD, and their righteousness is of me, saith the LORD.

Romans 8:33-34. Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? It is God that justifieth. Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

Entitles to an inheritance.

Titus 3:7. That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of Eternal Life.

Ensures glorification.

Romans 8:30. Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

The wicked shall not attain to.

Exodus 23:7 Keep thee far from a false matter; and the innocent and Righteous slay thou not: for I will not justify the wicked.

BY Faith

Revealed under the old dispensation.

Habakkuk 2:4. Behold, his soul which is lifted up is not upright in him: but the just shall live by his Faith.

Romans 1:17. For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from Faith to Faith: as it is written, The just shall live by Faith.

Excludes boasting.

Romans 3:27. Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by The Law of Faith.

Romans 4:2. For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory; but not before God.

1 Corinthians 1:29. That no flesh should glory in his presence.

1 Corinthians 1:31. That, according as it is written, He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

Does not make void The Law.

Romans 3:30-31. Seeing it is one God, which shall justify the circumcision by Faith, and uncircumcision through Faith. Do we then make void The Law through Faith? God forbid: yea, we establish The Law.

1 Corinthians 9:21. To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under The Law to Christ,) that I might gain them that are without law.

Typified.

Zechariah 3:4-5. And he answered and spake unto those that stood before him, saying, Take away the filthy garments from him. And unto him he said, Behold, I have caused thine iniquity to pass from thee, and I will clothe thee with change of raiment. And I said, Let them set a fair mitre upon his head. So they set a fair mitre upon his head, and clothed him with garments. And the angel of the LORD stood by.

Illustrated.

Luke 18:14. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be Abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

Exemplified.

Abraham,

Genesis 15:6. And he believed in the LORD; and he counted it to him for righteousness.

Paul,

Philippians 3:8-9. Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ, And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of The Law, but that which is through the Faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by Faith:

Reconciliation with God.

Predicted.

Daniel 9:24. Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy.

Isaiah 53:5. But he *was* wounded for our transgressions, *he was* bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace *was* upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.

Proclaimed By Angels At The Birth Of Christ.

Luke 2:14. Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.

Blotting Out The Hand-Writing Of Ordinances Was Necessary

Ephesians 2:16. And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby:

Colossians 2:14. Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;

EFFECTED FOR MEN

By God In Christ.

2 Corinthians 5:19. To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

By Christ As High Priest.

Hebrews 2:17. Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto *his* brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things *pertaining* to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.

By The Death Of Christ.

Romans 5:10. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

Ephesians 2:16. And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby:

Colossians 1:21-22. And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in *your* mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable and unproveable in his sight:

By The Blood Of Christ.

Ephesians 2:13. But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

Colossians 1:20. And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, *I say*, whether *they be* things in earth, or things in heaven.

While Alienated From God.

Colossians 1:21. And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in *your* mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled

Without Strength.

Romans 5:6. For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly.

Yet Sinners.

Romans 5:8. But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

While Enemies To God.

Romans 5:10. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

The Ministry Of Committed To Ministers.

2 Corinthians 5:18-19. And all things *are* of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

Ministers, In Christ's Stead, Should Beseech Men To Seek.

2 Corinthians 5:20. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech *you* by us: we pray *you* in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.

Effects Of.

Peace of God.

Romans 5:1. Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

Ephesians 2:16-17. And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby: And came and preached peace to you which were afar off, and to them that were nigh.

Access to God.

Romans 5:2. By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

Ephesians 2:18. For through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father.

Union of Jews and Gentiles.

Ephesians 2:14. For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition *between us*;

Union of things in heaven and earth.

Colossians 1:20. And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, *I say*, whether *they be* things in earth, or things in heaven.

Ephesians 1:10. That in the dispensation of the fulness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; *even* in him:

A pledge of final salvation.

Romans 5:10. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

Necessity for—Illustrated.

Matthew 5:24-26. Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

Typified.

Leviticus 8:15. And he slew *it*; and Moses took the blood, and put *it* upon the horns of the altar round about with his finger, and purified the altar, and poured the blood at the bottom of the altar, and sanctified it, to make reconciliation upon it.

Leviticus 16:20. And when he hath made an end of reconciling the holy *place*, and the tabernacle of the congregation, and the altar, he shall bring the live goat:

Redemption

Defined.

1 Corinthians 6:20. For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.

1 Corinthians 7:23. Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants of men.

Is of God.

Isaiah 44:21-23. Remember these, O Jacob and Israel; for thou *art* my servant: I have formed thee; thou *art* my servant: O Israel, thou shalt not be forgotten of me. I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and, as a cloud, thy sins: return unto me; for I have redeemed thee. Sing, O ye heavens; for the LORD hath done *it*: shout, ye lower parts of the earth: break forth into singing, ye mountains, O forest, and every tree therein: for the LORD hath redeemed Jacob, and glorified himself in Israel.

Isaiah 43:1. But now thus saith the LORD that created thee, O Jacob, and he that formed thee, O Israel, Fear not: for I have redeemed thee, I have called *thee* by thy name; thou *art* mine.

Luke 1:68. Blessed *be* the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed his people,

Is by Christ.

Matthew 20:28. Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

Galatians 3:13. Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed *is* every one that hangeth on a tree:

Is by the blood of Christ.

Acts 20:28. Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

Hebrews 9:12. Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption *for us*.

1 Peter 1:19. But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot:

Revelation 5:9. And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

Christ sent to effect.

Galatians 4:4-5. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

Christ is made, to us.

1 Corinthians 1:30. But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:

Is From

The bondage of the law.

Galatians 4:5. To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

The curse of the law.

Galatians 3:13. Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed *is* every one that hangeth on a tree:

The power of sin.

Romans 6:18. Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.

Romans 6:22. But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

The power of the grave.

Psalms 49:15. But God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave: for he shall receive me. Selah.

All troubles.

Psalms 25:22. Redeem Israel, O God, out of all his troubles.

All iniquity.

Psalms 130:8. And he shall redeem Israel from all his iniquities.

Titus 2:14. Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

All evil.

Genesis 48:16. The Angel which redeemed me from all evil, bless the lads; and let my name be named on them, and the name of my fathers Abraham and Isaac; and let them grow into a multitude in the midst of the earth.

The present evil world.

Galatians 1:4. Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father:

Vain conversation.

1 Peter 1:18. Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation *received* by tradition from your fathers;

Enemies.

Psalm 106:10-11. And he saved them from the hand of him that hated *them*, and redeemed them from the hand of the enemy. And the waters covered their enemies: there was not one of them left.

Death.

Hosea 13:14. I will ransom them from the power of the grave; I will redeem them from death: O death, I will be thy plagues; O grave, I will be thy destruction: repentance shall be hid from mine eyes.

Destruction.

Psalm 103:4. Who redeemeth thy life from destruction; who crowneth thee with lovingkindness and tender mercies;

Man cannot affect.

Psalm 49:7. None of *them* can by any means redeem his brother, nor give to God a ransom for him:

Corruptible things cannot purchase.

1 Peter 1:18. Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation *received* by tradition from your fathers;

Procures For Us

Justification.

Romans 3:24. Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:

Forgiveness of sin.

Ephesians 1:7. In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;

Colossians 1:14. In whom we have redemption through his blood, *even* the forgiveness of sins:

Adoption.

Galatians 4:4-5. But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

Purification.

Titus 2:14. Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

The present life, the only season for.

Job 36:18-19. Because *there is* wrath, *beware* lest he take thee away with *his* stroke: then a great ransom cannot deliver thee. Will he esteem thy riches? *no*, not gold, nor all the forces of strength.

Described As

Precious.

Psalms 49:8. (For the redemption of their soul *is* precious, and it ceaseth for ever:)

Plenteous.

Psalms 130:7. Let Israel hope in the LORD: for with the LORD *there is* mercy, and with him *is* plenteous redemption.

Eternal.

Hebrews 9:12. Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption *for us*.

SUBJECTS OF

The soul.

Psalms 49:15. But God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave: for he shall receive me. Selah.

The body.

Romans 8:23. And not only *they*, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, *to wit*, the redemption of our body.

The life.

Psalms 103:4. Who redeemeth thy life from destruction; who crowneth thee with lovingkindness and tender mercies;

Lamentations 3:58. O Lord, thou hast pleaded the causes of my soul; thou hast redeemed my life.

The inheritance.

Ephesians 1:14. Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.

Manifests The

Power of God.

Isaiah 50:2. Wherefore, when I came, *was there* no man? when I called, *was there* none to answer? Is my hand shortened at all, that it cannot redeem? or have I no power to deliver? behold, at my rebuke I dry up the sea, I make the rivers a wilderness: their fish stinketh, because *there is* no water, and dieth for thirst.

Grace of God.

Isaiah 52:3. For thus saith the LORD, Ye have sold yourselves for nought; and ye shall be redeemed without money.

Love and pity of God.

Isaiah 63:9. In all their affliction he was afflicted, and the angel of his presence saved them: in his love and in his pity he redeemed them; and he bare them, and carried them all the days of old.

John 3:16. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

Romans 6:8. Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him:

1 John 4:10. Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son *to be* the propitiation for our sins.

A subject for praise.

Isaiah 44:22. I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and, as a cloud, thy sins: return unto me; for I have redeemed thee.

Isaiah 51:11. Therefore the redeemed of the LORD shall return, and come with singing unto Zion; and everlasting joy *shall be* upon their head: they shall obtain gladness and joy; *and* sorrow and mourning shall flee away.

Old Testament saints partakers of.

Hebrews 9:15. And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions *that were* under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

They Who Partake Of

Are the property of God.

Isaiah 43:1. But now thus saith the LORD that created thee, O Jacob, and he that formed thee, O Israel, Fear not: for I have redeemed thee, I have called *thee* by thy name; thou *art* mine.

1 Corinthians 6:20. For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.

Are first-fruits unto God.

Revelation 14:4. These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from among men, *being* the firstfruits unto God and to the Lamb.

Are a peculiar people.

2 Samuel 7:23. And what one nation in the earth *is* like thy people, *even* like Israel, whom God went to redeem for a people to himself, and to make him a name, and to do for you great things and terrible, for thy land, before thy people, which thou redeemedst to thee from Egypt, *from* the nations and their gods?

Titus 2:14 Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

1 Peter 2:9. But ye *are* a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

Are assured of.

Job 19:25. For I know *that* my redeemer liveth, and *that* he shall stand at the latter *day* upon the earth:

Psalms 31:5. Into thine hand I commit my spirit: thou hast redeemed me, O LORD God of truth.

Are sealed unto the day of.

Ephesians 4:30. And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

Are Zealous of good works.

Ephesians 2:10. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

Titus 2:14. Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

1 Peter 2:9. But ye *are* a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

Walk safely in holiness.

Isaiah 35:8-9. And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it *shall be* for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err *therein*. No lion shall be there, nor *any* ravenous beast shall go up thereon, it shall not be found there; but the redeemed shall walk *there*:

Shall return to Zion with joy.

Isaiah 35:10. And the ransomed of the LORD shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away.

Alone can learn the songs of heaven.

Revelation 14:3-4. And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song but the hundred *and* forty *and* four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth. These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth. These were redeemed from among men, *being* the firstfruits unto God and to the Lamb.

Commit themselves to God.

Psalms 31:5. Into thine hand I commit my spirit: thou hast redeemed me, O LORD God of truth.

Have an earnest of the completion of.

Ephesians 1:14. Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.

2 Corinthians 1:22. Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

Wait for the completion of.

Romans 8:23. And not only *they*, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, *to wit*, the redemption of our body.

Philippians 3:20-21. For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

Pray for the completion of.

Psalms 26:11. But as for me, I will walk in mine integrity: redeem me, and be merciful unto me.

Psalms 44:26. Arise for our help, and redeem us for thy mercies' sake.

Praise God for.

Psalms 71:23. My lips shall greatly rejoice when I sing unto thee; and my soul, which thou hast redeemed.

Psalms 103:4. Who redeemeth thy life from destruction; who crowneth thee with lovingkindness and tender mercies;

Revelation 5:9. And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

Should glorify God for.

1 Corinthians 6:20. For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.

Should be without fear.

Isaiah 43:1. But now thus saith the LORD that created thee, O Jacob, and he that formed thee, O Israel, Fear not: for I have redeemed thee, I have called *thee* by thy name; thou *art* mine.

Typified.

Israel,

Exodus 6:6. Wherefore say unto the children of Israel, I *am* the LORD, and I will bring you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians, and I will rid you out of their bondage, and I will redeem you with a stretched out arm, and with great judgments: *First-born,*

Exodus 13:11-15. And it shall be when the LORD shall bring thee into the land of the Canaanites, as he sware unto thee and to thy fathers, and shall give it thee, That thou shalt set apart unto the LORD all that openeth the matrix, and every firstling that cometh of a beast which thou hast; the males *shall be* the LORD'S. And every firstling of an ass thou shalt redeem with a lamb; and if thou wilt not redeem it, then thou shalt break his neck: and all the firstborn of man among thy children shalt thou redeem. And it shall be when thy son asketh thee in time to come, saying, What *is* this? that thou shalt say unto him, By strength of hand the LORD brought us out from Egypt, from the house of bondage: ...

Numbers 18:15. Every thing that openeth the matrix in all flesh, which they bring unto the LORD, *whether it be* of men or beasts, shall be thine: nevertheless the firstborn of man shalt thou surely redeem, and the firstling of unclean beasts shalt thou redeem.

Atonement-money,

Exodus 30:12-15. When thou takest the sum of the children of Israel after their number, then shall they give every man a ransom for his soul unto the LORD, when thou numberest them; that there be no plague among them, when *thou* numberest them. This they shall give, every one that passeth among them that are numbered, half a shekel after the shekel of the sanctuary: (a shekel *is* twenty gerahs:) an half shekel *shall be* the offering of the LORD. Every one that passeth among them that are numbered, from twenty years old and above, shall give an offering unto the LORD. The rich shall not give more, and the poor shall not give less than half a shekel, when *they* give an offering unto the LORD, to make an atonement for your souls.

Bond-servant,

Leviticus 25:47-54. And if a sojourner or stranger wax rich by thee, and thy brother *that dwelleth* by him wax poor, and sell himself unto the stranger *or* sojourner by thee, or to the stock of the stranger's family: After that he is sold he may be redeemed again; one of his brethren may redeem him: Either his uncle, or his uncle's son, may redeem him, or *any* that is nigh of kin unto him of his family may redeem him; or if he be able, he may redeem himself. And he shall reckon with him that bought him from the year that he was sold to him unto the year of jubile: and the price of his sale shall be according unto the number of years, according to the time of an hired servant shall it be with him.

Salvation.

Is of God.

Psalms 3:8. Salvation *belongeth* unto the LORD: thy blessing *is* upon thy people. Selah.

Psalms 37:39. But the salvation of the righteous *is* of the LORD: *he is* their strength in the time of trouble.

Jeremiah 3:23. Truly in vain *is salvation hoped for* from the hills, *and from* the multitude of mountains: truly in the LORD our God *is* the salvation of Israel.

Is of the purpose of God.

2 Timothy 1:9. Who hath saved us, and called *us* with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began,

Is of the appointment of God.

1 Thessalonians 5:9. For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ,

God is willing to give.

1 Timothy 2:4. Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.

Is by Christ.

Isaiah 63:9. In all their affliction he was afflicted, and the angel of his presence saved them: in his love and in his pity he redeemed them; and he bare them, and carried them all the days of old.

Ephesians 5:23. For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body.

Is by Christ alone.

Isaiah 45:21. Tell ye, and bring *them* near; yea, let them take counsel together: who hath declared this from ancient time? *who* hath told it from that time? *have* not I the LORD? and *there is* no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; *there is* none beside me.

Isaiah 59:16. And he saw that *there was* no man, and wondered that *there was* no intercessor: therefore his arm brought salvation unto him; and his righteousness, it sustained him.

Acts 4:12. Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

Announced after the fall.

Genesis 3:15. And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.

Of Israel, predicted.

Isaiah 35:4. Say to them *that are* of a fearful heart, Be strong, fear not: behold, your God will come *with* vengeance, *even* God *with* a recompence; he will come and save you.

Isaiah 45:17. *But* Israel shall be saved in the LORD with an everlasting salvation: ye shall not be ashamed nor confounded world without end.

Zechariah 9:16. And the LORD their God shall save them in that day as the flock of his people: for *they shall be as* the stones of a crown, lifted up as an ensign upon his land.

Romans 11:26. And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob:

Of the Gentiles, predicted.

Isaiah 45:22. Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I *am* God, and *there is* none else.

Isaiah 49:6. And he said, It is a light thing that thou shouldest be my servant to raise up the tribes of Jacob, and to restore the preserved of Israel: I will also give thee for a light to the Gentiles, that thou mayest be my salvation unto the end of the earth.

Isaiah 52:10. The LORD hath made bare his holy arm in the eyes of all the nations; and all the ends of the earth shall see the salvation of our God.

Revealed in the gospel.

Ephesians 1:13. In whom ye also *trusted*, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,

2 Timothy 1:10. But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel:

Came to the Gentiles through the fall of the Jews.

Romans 11:11. I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but *rather* through their fall salvation *is come* unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousy.

CHRIST

The Captain of.

Hebrews 2:10. For it became him, for whom *are* all things, and by whom *are* all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.

The Author of.

Hebrews 5:9. And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him;

Appointed for.

Isaiah 49:6. And he said, It is a light thing that thou shouldest be my servant to raise up the tribes of Jacob, and to restore the preserved of Israel: I will also give thee for a light to the Gentiles, that thou mayest be my salvation unto the end of the earth.

Raised up for.

Luke 1:69. And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David;

Has.

Zechariah 9:9. Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he *is* just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass.

Brings, with Him.

Isaiah 62:11. Behold, the LORD hath proclaimed unto the end of the world, Say ye to the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy salvation cometh; behold, his reward *is* with him, and his work before him.

Luke 19:9. And Jesus said unto him, *This day is salvation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is a son of Abraham.*

Mighty to effect.

Isaiah 63:1. Who *is* this that cometh from Edom, with dyed garments from Bozrah? this *that is* glorious in his apparel, travelling in the greatness of his strength? I that speak in righteousness, mighty to save.

Hebrews 7:25. Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

Came to effect.

Matthew 18:11. For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

1 Timothy 1:15. This *is* a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief.

Died to effect.

John 3:14-15. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.

Exalted to give.

Acts 5:31. Him hath God exalted with his right hand *to be* a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

Is not by works.

Romans 11:6. And if by grace, then *is it* no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if *it be* of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.

Ephesians 2:9. Not of works, lest any man should boast.

2 Timothy 1:9. Who hath saved us, and called *us* with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began,

Titus 3:5. Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

Is of grace.

Ephesians 2:5. Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)

Ephesians 2:8. For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God:

2 Timothy 1:9. Who hath saved us, and called *us* with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began,

Titus 2:11. For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men,

Is of love.

Romans 5:8. But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

1 John 4:9-10. In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him. Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son *to be* the propitiation for our sins.

Is of mercy.

Psalms 6:4. Return, O LORD, deliver my soul: oh save me for thy mercies' sake.

Titus 3:5. Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

Is of the long-suffering of God.

2 Peter 3:15. And account *that* the longsuffering of our Lord *is* salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him hath written unto you;

Is through faith in Christ.

Mark 16:16. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.

Acts 16:31. And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

Romans 10:9. That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

Ephesians 2:8. For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God:

1 Peter 1:5. Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.

Reconciliation to God, a pledge of.

Romans 5:10. For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

IS DELIVERANCE FROM

Sin

Matthew 1:21. And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

1 John 3:5. And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin.

Uncleanness.

Ezekiel 36:29. I will also save you from all your uncleannesses: and I will call for the corn, and will increase it, and lay no famine upon you.

The devil.

Colossians 2:15. *And* having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

Hebrews 2:14-15. Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil; And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage.

Wrath.

Romans 5:9. Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.

1 Thessalonians 1:10. And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come.

This present evil world.

Galatians 1:4. Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father:

Enemies.

Luke 1:71. That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us;

Luke 1:74. That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies might serve him without fear,

Eternal death.

John 3:16-17. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

Confession of Christ necessary to.

Romans 10:10. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

Regeneration necessary to.

John 3:3. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

Final perseverance necessary to.

Matthew 10:22. And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

Described As

Great.

Hebrews 2:3. How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him;

Glorious.

2 Timothy 2:10. Therefore I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory.

Common.

Jude 3. Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort *you* that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

From generation to generation.

Isaiah 51:8. For the moth shall eat them up like a garment, and the worm shall eat them like wool: but my righteousness shall be for ever, and my salvation from generation to generation.

To the uttermost.

Hebrews 7:25. Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

Eternal.

Isaiah 45:17. *But* Israel shall be saved in the LORD with an everlasting salvation: ye shall not be ashamed nor confounded world without end.

Isaiah 51:6. Lift up your eyes to the heavens, and look upon the earth beneath: for the heavens shall vanish away like smoke, and the earth shall wax old like a garment, and they that dwell therein shall die in like manner: but my salvation shall be for ever, and my righteousness shall not be abolished.

Hebrews 5:9. And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him;

Searched into and exhibited by the prophets.

1 Peter 1:10. Of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace *that should come* unto you:

The gospel is the power of God unto.

Romans 1:16. For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

1 Corinthians 1:18. For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God.

Preaching the word is the appointed means of.

1 Corinthians 1:21. For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe.

The Scriptures are able to make wise unto.

2 Timothy 3:15. And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

James 1:21. Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls.

Now is the day of.

Isaiah 49:8. Thus saith the LORD, In an acceptable time have I heard thee, and in a day of salvation have I helped thee: and I will preserve thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, to establish the earth, to cause to inherit the desolate heritages;

2 Corinthians 6:2. (For he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now *is* the accepted time; behold, now *is* the day of salvation.)

From sin, to be worked out with fear and trembling.

Philippians 2:12. Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.

SAINTS

Chosen to.

2 Thessalonians 2:13. But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth:

2 Timothy 1:9. Who hath saved us, and called *us* with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began,

Appointed to obtain.

1 Thessalonians 5:9. For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ,

Are heirs of.

Hebrews 1:14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?

Have, through grace.

Acts 15:11. But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved, even as they.

Have a token of, in their patient suffering for Christ.

Philippians 1:28-29. And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God. For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake;

Kept by the power of God unto.

1 Peter 1:5. Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time.

Beautified with.

Psalms 149:4. For the LORD taketh pleasure in his people: he will beautify the meek with salvation.

Clothed with.

Isaiah 61:10. I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh *himself* with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth *herself* with her jewels.

Satisfied by.

Luke 2:30. For mine eyes have seen thy salvation,

Love.

Psalms 40:16. Let all those that seek thee rejoice and be glad in thee: let such as love thy salvation say continually, The LORD be magnified.

Hope for.

Lamentations 3:26. *It is good that a man should both hope and quietly wait for the salvation of the LORD.*

Romans 8:24. For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?

Wait for.

Genesis 49:18. I have waited for thy salvation, O LORD.

Lamentations 3:26. *It is good that a man should both hope and quietly wait for the salvation of the LORD.*

Long for.

Psalms 119:81. CAPH. My soul fainteth for thy salvation: *but* I hope in thy word.

Psalms 119:174. I have longed for thy salvation, O LORD; and thy law *is* my delight.

Earnestly look for.

Psalms 119:123. Mine eyes fail for thy salvation, and for the word of thy righteousness.

Daily approach nearer to.

Romans 13:11. And that, knowing the time, that now *it is* high time to awake out of sleep: for now *is* our salvation nearer than when we believed.

Receive, as the end of their faith.

1 Peter 1:9. Receiving the end of your faith, *even* the salvation of *your* souls.

Welcome the tidings of.

Isaiah 52:7. How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace; that bringeth good tidings of good, that publisheth salvation; that saith unto Zion, Thy God reigneth!

Romans 10:15. And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

Pray to be visited with.

Psalms 85:7. Shew us thy mercy, O LORD, and grant us thy salvation.

Psalms 106:4. Remember me, O LORD, with the favour *that thou bearest unto* thy people: O visit me with thy salvation;

Psalms 119:41. Let thy mercies come also unto me, O LORD, *even* thy salvation, according to thy word.

Pray for assurance of.

Psalms 35:3. Draw out also the spear, and stop *the way* against them that persecute me: say unto my soul, *I am* thy salvation.

Pray for a joyful sense of.

Psalms 51:12. Restore unto me the joy of thy salvation; and uphold me *with thy* free spirit.

Evidence, by works.

Hebrews 6:9-10. But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak. For God *is* not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have shewed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister.

Ascribe, to God.

Psalms 25:5. Lead me in thy truth, and teach me: for thou *art* the God of my salvation; on thee do I wait all the day.

Isaiah 12:2. Behold, God *is* my salvation; I will trust, and not be afraid: for the LORD JEHOVAH *is* my strength and *my* song; he also *is* become my salvation.

Praise God for.

1 Chronicles 16:23. Sing unto the LORD, all the earth; shew forth from day to day his salvation.

Psalms 96:2. Sing unto the LORD, bless his name; shew forth his salvation from day to day.

Commemorate, with thanks.

Psalms 116:12. What shall I render unto the LORD *for* all his benefits toward me?

Rejoice in.

Psalms 9:14. That I may shew forth all thy praise in the gates of the daughter of Zion: I will rejoice in thy salvation.

Psalms 21:1. The king shall joy in thy strength, O LORD; and in thy salvation how greatly shall he rejoice!

Isaiah 25:9. And it shall be said in that day, Lo, this *is* our God; we have waited for him, and he will save us: this *is* the LORD; we have waited for him, we will be glad and rejoice in his salvation.

Glory in.

1 Corinthians 1:31. That, according as it is written, He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

Galatians 6:14. But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.

Declare.

Psalms 40:10. I have not hid thy righteousness within my heart; I have declared thy faithfulness and thy salvation: I have not concealed thy lovingkindness and thy truth from the great congregation.

Psalms 71:15. My mouth shall shew forth thy righteousness *and* thy salvation all the day; for I know not the numbers *thereof*.

Godly sorrow worketh repentance unto.

2 Corinthians 7:10. For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

All the earth shall see.

Isaiah 52:10. The LORD hath made bare his holy arm in the eyes of all the nations; and all the ends of the earth shall see the salvation of our God.

Luke 3:6. And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

Ministers.

Give the knowledge of.

Luke 1:77. To give knowledge of salvation unto his people by the remission of their sins,

Show the way of.

Acts 16:17. The same followed Paul and us, and cried, saying, These men are the servants of the most high God, which shew unto us the way of salvation.

Should exhort to.

Ezekiel 3:18-19. When I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely die; and thou givest him not warning, nor speakest to warn the wicked from his wicked way, to save his life; the same wicked *man* shall die in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at thine hand. Yet if thou warn the wicked, and he turn not from his wickedness, nor from his wicked way, he shall die in his iniquity; but thou hast delivered thy soul.

Should labor to lead others to.

Romans 11:14. If by any means I may provoke to emulation *them which are* my flesh, and might save some of them.

Should be clothed in.

2 Chronicles 6:41. Now therefore arise, O LORD God, into thy resting place, thou, and the ark of thy strength: let thy priests, O LORD God, be clothed with salvation, and let thy saints rejoice in goodness.

Psalms 132:16. I will also clothe her priests with salvation: and her saints shall shout aloud for joy.

Should use self-denial to lead others to.

1 Corinthians 9:22. To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all *men*, that I might by all means save some.

Should endure suffering that the elect may obtain.

2 Timothy 2:10. Therefore I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory.

Are a sweet savor of Christ unto God, in those who obtain.

2 Corinthians 2:15. For we are unto God a sweet savour of Christ, in them that are saved, and in them that perish:

The heavenly host ascribes to God.

Revelation 7:10. And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.

Revelation 19:1. And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, unto the Lord our God:

Sought in Vain From.

Idols.

Isaiah 45:20. Assemble yourselves and come; draw near together, ye *that are* escaped of the nations: they have no knowledge that set up the wood of their graven image, and pray unto a god *that* cannot save.

Jeremiah 2:28. But where *are* thy gods that thou hast made thee? let them arise, if they can save thee in the time of thy trouble: for *according to* the number of thy cities are thy gods, O Judah.

Earthly power.

Jeremiah 3:23. Truly in vain *is salvation hoped for* from the hills, *and from* the multitude of mountains: truly in the LORD our God *is* the salvation of Israel.

No escape for those who neglect.

Hebrews 2:3. How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard *him*;

Is far off from the wicked.

Psalms 119:155. Salvation *is* far from the wicked: for they seek not thy statutes.

Isaiah 59:11. We roar all like bears, and mourn sore like doves: we look for judgment, but *there is* none; for salvation, *but* it is far off from us.

Illustrated By

A rock.

Deuteronomy 32:15. But Jeshurun waxed fat, and kicked: thou art waxen fat, thou art grown thick, thou art covered *with fatness*; **then he forsook God *which* made him, and lightly esteemed the Rock of his salvation.**

2 Samuel 22:47. The LORD liveth; and blessed *be* my rock; and exalted be the God of the rock of my salvation.

Psalms 95:1. O come, let us sing unto the LORD: let us make a joyful noise to the rock of our salvation.

A horn.

Psalms 18:2. The LORD *is* my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer; my God, my strength, in whom I will trust; my buckler, and the horn of my salvation, *and* my high tower.

Luke 1:69. And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David;

A tower.

2 Samuel 22:51. *He is* the tower of salvation for his king: and sheweth mercy to his anointed, unto David, and to his seed for evermore.

A helmet.

Isaiah 59:17. For he put on righteousness as a breastplate, and an helmet of salvation upon his head; and he put on the garments of vengeance *for* clothing, and was clad with zeal as a cloke.

Ephesians 6:17. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:

A shield.

2 Samuel 22:36. Thou hast also given me the shield of thy salvation: and thy gentleness hath made me great.

A lamp.

Isaiah 62:1. For Zion's sake will I not hold my peace, and for Jerusalem's sake I will not rest, until the righteousness thereof go forth as brightness, and the salvation thereof as a lamp *that* burneth.

A cup.

Psalms 116:13. I will take the cup of salvation, and call upon the name of the LORD.

Clothing.

2 Chronicles 6:41. Now therefore arise, O LORD God, into thy resting place, thou, and the ark of thy strength: let thy priests, O LORD God, be clothed with salvation, and let thy saints rejoice in goodness.

Psalms 132:16. I will also clothe her priests with salvation: and her saints shall shout aloud for joy.

Psalms 149:4. For the LORD taketh pleasure in his people: he will beautify the meek with salvation.

Isaiah 61:10. I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he hath clothed me with the garments of salvation, he hath covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decketh *himself* with ornaments, and as a bride adorneth *herself* with her jewels.

Wells.

Isaiah 12:3. Therefore with joy shall ye draw water out of the wells of salvation.

Walls and bulwarks.

Isaiah 26:1. In that day shall this song be sung in the land of Judah; We have a strong city; salvation will God appoint *for* walls and bulwarks.

Isaiah 60:18. Violence shall no more be heard in thy land, wasting nor destruction within thy borders; but thou shalt call thy walls Salvation, and thy gates Praise.

Chariots.

Habakkuk 3:8. Was the LORD displeased against the rivers? *was* thine anger against the rivers? *was* thy wrath against the sea, that thou didst ride upon thine horses *and* thy chariots of salvation?

A victory.

1 Corinthians 15:57. But thanks *be* to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

Typified.

Numbers 21:4-9. And they journeyed from mount Hor by the way of the Red sea, to compass the land of Edom: and the soul of the people was much discouraged because of the way. And the people spake against God, and against Moses, Wherefore have ye brought us up out of Egypt to die in the wilderness? for *there is* no bread, neither *is there any* water; and our soul loatheth this light bread. And the LORD sent fiery serpents among the people, and they bit the people; and much people of Israel died. Therefore the people came to Moses, and said, We have sinned, for we have spoken against the LORD, and against thee; pray unto the LORD, that he take away the serpents from us. And Moses prayed for the people. And the LORD said unto Moses, Make thee a fiery serpent, and set it upon a pole: and it shall come to pass, that every one that is bitten, when he looketh upon it, shall live. And Moses made a serpent of brass, and put it upon a pole, and it came to pass, that if a serpent had bitten any man, when he beheld the serpent of brass, he lived.

John 3:14-15. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.

Character of the Renewed Heart

Prepared to seek God.

2 Chronicles 19:3. Nevertheless there are good things found in thee, in that thou hast taken away the Groves out of the land, and hast prepared thine heart to seek God.

Ezra 7:10. For Ezra had prepared his heart to seek The Law of the LORD, and to do it, and to Teach in Israel statutes and judgments.

Psalms 10:17. LORD, thou hast heard the desire of the humble: thou wilt prepare their heart, thou wilt cause thine ear to hear:

Fixed on God.

Psalms 57:7. My heart is fixed, O God, my heart is fixed: I will Sing and give praise.

Psalms 112:7. He shall not be afraid of evil tidings: his heart is fixed, trusting in the LORD.

Joyful in God.

1 Samuel 2:1. And Hannah prayed, and said, My heart rejoiceth in the LORD, mine horn is exalted in the LORD: my mouth is enlarged over mine enemies; because I rejoice in thy Salvation.

Zechariah 10:7. And they of Ephraim shall be like a mighty man, and their heart shall rejoice as through wine: yea, their children shall see it, and be glad; their heart shall rejoice in the LORD.

Perfect with God.

1 Kings 8:61. Let your heart therefore be perfect with the LORD our God, to walk in his statutes, and to keep his commandments, as at this day.

Psalms 101:2. I will behave myself wisely in a perfect way. O when wilt thou come unto me? I will walk within my house with a perfect heart.

Upright.

Psalms 97:11. Light is sown for the Righteous, and gladness for the upright in heart.

Psalms 125:4. Do good, O LORD, unto those that be good, and to them that are upright in their hearts.

Clean.

Psalm 73:1. Truly God is good to Israel, even to such as are of a clean heart.

Pure.

Psalm 24:4. He that hath clean hands, and a pure heart; who hath not lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sworn deceitfully.

Matthew 5:8. *Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.*

Tender.

1 Samuel 24:5. And it came to pass afterward, that David's heart smote him, because he had cut off Saul's skirt.

2 Kings 22:19. Because thine heart was tender, and thou hast humbled thyself before the LORD, when thou heardest what I spake against this place, and against the inhabitants thereof, that they should become a desolation and a curse, and hast rent thy clothes, and wept before me; I also have heard thee, saith the LORD.

Single and sincere.

Acts 2:46. And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart,

Hebrews 10:22. Let us draw near with a true heart in full Assurance of Faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil Conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.

Honest and good.

Luke 8:15. *But that on the good ground are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience.*

Broken, contrite.

Psalm 34:18. The LORD is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart; and saveth such as be of a contrite spirit.

Psalm 51:17. The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise.

Obedient.

Psalm 119:112. I have inclined mine heart to perform thy statutes alway, even unto the end.

Romans 6:17. But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of Sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.

Keeps the Commandments of Christ.

Psalm 40:8. I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy law is within my heart.

Psalm 119:11. Thy word have I hid in mine heart, that I might not sin against thee.

John 14:15. *If ye love me, keep my commandments.*

John 14:23-24. Jesus answered and said unto him, *If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.*

Awed by the word of God.

Psalm 119:161. Princes have persecuted me without a cause: but my heart standeth in awe of thy word.

Filled with the fear of God.

Jeremiah 32:40. And I will make an everlasting covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them, to do them good; but I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me.

Meditative.

Psalm 4:4. Stand in awe, and Sin not: commune with your own heart upon your bed, and be still. Selah.

Psalm 77:6. I call to remembrance my song in the night: I commune with mine own heart: and my spirit made diligent search.

Circumcised.

Deuteronomy 30:6. And the LORD thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the LORD thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live.

Romans 2:29. But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

Void of fear.

Psalm 27:3. Though an host should encamp against me, my heart shall not fear: though war should rise against me, in this will I be confident.

Desirous of God.

Psalm 84:2. My soul longeth, yea, even fainteth for the courts of the LORD: my heart and my flesh crieth out for the living God.

Enlarged.

Psalm 119:32. I will run the way of thy commandments, when thou shalt enlarge my heart.

2 Corinthians 6:11. O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, our heart is enlarged.

Faithful to God.

Nehemiah 9:8. And foundest his heart Faithful before thee, and madest a covenant with him to give the land of the Canaanites, the Hittites, the Amorites, and the Perizzites, and the Jebusites, and the Girgashites, to give it, I say, to his seed, and hast performed thy words; for thou Art Righteous:

Confident in God.

Psalm 112:7. He shall not be afraid of evil tidings: his heart is fixed, trusting in the LORD.

Sympathizing.

Jeremiah 4:19. My Bowels, my Bowels! I am pained at my very heart; my heart maketh a noise in me; I cannot hold my peace, because thou hast heard, O my soul, the sound of the trumpet, the alarm of war.

Lamentations 3:51. Mine eye affecteth mine heart because of all the daughters of my city.

Prayerful.

1 Samuel 1:13. Now Hannah, she spake in her heart; only her lips moved, but her voice was not heard: therefore Eli thought she had been drunken.

Psalm 27:8. When thou saidst, Seek ye my face; my heart said unto thee, Thy face, LORD, will I seek.

Inclined to obedience.

Psalm 119:112. I have inclined mine heart to perform thy statutes alway, even unto the end.

Wholly devoted to God.

Psalm 9:1. I will praise thee, O LORD, with my whole heart; I will shew forth all thy marvellous works.

Psalms 119:10. With my whole heart have I sought thee: O let me not wander from thy commandments.

Psalms 119:69. The proud have forged a lie against me: but I will keep thy precepts with my whole heart.

Psalms 119:145. I cried with my whole heart; hear me, O LORD: I will keep thy statutes.

Zealous.

2 Chronicles 17:6. And his heart was lifted up in the ways of the LORD: moreover he took away the high places and Groves out of Judah.

Jeremiah 20:9. Then I said, I will not make mention of him, nor speak any more in his name. But his word was in mine heart as a burning fire shut up in my bones, and I was weary with forbearing, and I could not stay.

Wise.

Proverbs 10:8. The wise in heart will receive commandments: but a prating fool shall fall.

Proverbs 14:33. Wisdom resteth in the heart of him that hath understanding: but that which is in the midst of fools is made known.

Proverbs 23:15. My son, if thine heart be wise, my heart shall rejoice, even mine.

A treasury of good.

Matthew 12:35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things.

Institutional Church Denominations.

The Apostles in the First Century Started House Churches

House Churches are the only churches in the New Testament. Starting in the second century, cathedrals were built on top of the first house churches long after the first generation of the Church and the apostles had died.

Christians around the world believe in Jesus Christ's divinity, the Trinity of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, and the authority of the scriptures as the Word of God. However, despite these shared beliefs, an immense number of Christians have separated into various denominations. The differences between these denominations can range from their worship styles to their interpretations of theological teachings.

Roman Catholic Church

In 607 AD, Pope Boniface III received a decree from the Byzantine Emperor Phocas declaring the Roman See (the Diocese of Rome) as the "head of all the Churches" and the Pope as the "Universal Bishop." This decree solidified the Pope's primacy over other bishops and marked a crucial step in the establishment of papal supremacy. Its headquarters are located in Vatican City. Today, around 18.7% of the U.S. population, totaling around 62 million people, identifies as Roman Catholics, illustrating the enduring influence of this denomination.

1260 years later, in 1867, the Papal States, which were territories in central Italy governed by the Pope, faced significant challenges due to the ongoing process of Italian unification. Forces aligned with the Italian nationalist movement sought to unify the various Italian states, including the Papal States, into a single nation-state.

During this time, conflicts and military actions involving the Papal States occurred. In 1860, some territories were annexed by the Kingdom of Sardinia. By 1870, with the capture of Rome, the process of Italian unification was completed. **As a result, the Papal States ceased to exist, and Rome became the capital of the newly unified Kingdom of Italy.**

During the Dark Ages, the Papacy conducted an Inquisition, which gave the state authority to kill the saints. During this time, no one in Europe could buy, sell, or conduct business without approval and license from the Roman Catholic Church.

Eastern Orthodox Church

The first division in Christianity occurred in the Great Schism of 1054 when the Eastern Orthodox Church separated from the Roman Catholic Church. **The Eastern Orthodox Church contested the authority of the Pope** and emphasized a collective consensus of Bishops. Other differences included the use of leavened bread and Greek text in the Eastern Orthodox Church. There are between 1 and 6 million members of the Eastern Orthodox Church in America.

Church of England

Formed in 16th-century England, the Church of England was the first major Protestant denomination of Christianity. It was associated with the reign of King Henry VIII, which prompted many individuals across Europe to break away from the Roman Catholic Church.

Puritanism

Upon the formation of the Church of England, the Puritanism movement emerged in the late 16th century. The Puritans sought a simpler form of worship, emphasized personal holiness, and stressed the need to lead a devout life through simple living, frugality, and hard work. Their influence on the American colonies through immigration was significant, and their impact can still be observed in the cultural and social landscape of America today.

Lutheranism

The first Protestant denomination to break away from Catholicism was Lutheranism, which was a Reformation movement in Germany in the 16th century. This division was caused by the excessive practices of the Roman Catholic Church at that time. The German monk Martin Luther believed that these practices contradicted true Christianity. Today, there are 3.3 million members of the Evangelical Lutheran Church in America.

Presbyterianism

Drawing inspiration from the 16th-century Protestant Reformation, Presbyterianism was established based on the doctrines of John Knox and John Calvin. It entails a system of elected elders in the Church. It emphasizes simple worship, with followers concentrating on missionary work and addressing social injustice. Today, there are over 1 million Presbyterians in America.

Baptist

Baptists originated in England during the 17th century and were influenced by the Puritanism movement. The Southern Baptist Convention is a significant denomination in the United States. This denomination advocates for the complete immersion of an individual during baptism as a way to cleanse all sin. There are 50 million Baptists in America, constituting 15.3% of the country's population and a third of all American Protestants.

Methodism

Founded in 18th-century England by John Wesley, Methodism positioned itself as a "renewal movement" aligned with Anglicanism. The United Methodist Church is a significant denomination in America. Wesley inspired working-class individuals who were often overlooked by other churches and emphasized salvation through faith in Jesus Christ. Presently, there are 6.5 million Methodists in America.

Mormonism

The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, also known as Mormonism, is a 19th-century Christian denomination founded by Joseph Smith. This group views the Book of Mormon as having equal importance to the Bible. Currently, there are approximately 6.5 million Mormons in America.

Episcopal Church

The Episcopal Church in America, considered an American branch of the Church of England, has a current membership of around 1.5 million. This denomination has some practices in common with the Anglican Church. It maintains the Nicene Creed as a statement of faith, as also used in the Church of England and the Roman Catholic Church.

Seventh-Day Adventist

The Seventh-day Adventist denomination, founded in the 19th century, observes the Sabbath on Saturdays in accordance with the Fourth Commandment, which is a significant departure from the Sunday observance of other Christian denominations. This denomination also promotes vegetarianism and abstains from alcohol and tobacco, reflecting a unique set of beliefs and practices that may pique the interest of the audience. Today, over 1 million Seventh-day Adventists in America adhere to these distinctive principles.

Jehovah's Witness

The Jehovah's Witness denomination in America has about 2.5 million members and is growing every day. Founded in the late 19th century, followers of Jehovah's Witness believe that Jesus Christ is the highest creation of God and that we are currently living in the final days.

Church of the Nazarene

The Church of the Nazarene is a relatively small Christian denomination in America, with around 650,000 members. Established in the late 19th century, it is dedicated to propagating the Gospel and striving for holiness.

Pentecostalism

Christianity's Pentecostal denomination was created in the early 20th century and has amassed a staggering 65 million followers across America. This denomination focuses on experiencing the Holy Spirit with many followers "speaking in tongues" and witnessing practices of divine healing.

Assemblies of God

The Assemblies of God denomination has more than 13,000 churches and 3 million members in America. It was founded in 1914 and is influenced by Pentecostal Christianity, making it a relatively new denomination.

Quakers

The Religious Society of Friends, also known as Quakers, is a Christian denomination that advocates simplicity, pacifism, and silent worship. Quakers uphold strong moral values, reject materialism, and promote equality for all individuals. Quaker women have played a significant role in the movement since its inception, and all Quakers have been outspoken opponents of slavery and the mistreatment of Native Americans. Presently, there are approximately 75,000 Quakers in America.

Christian Science Church

The Christian Science Church was established in the late 19th century. It promotes the belief that sickness, death, and sin are illusions that can be overcome through spiritual empowerment. The Church offers spiritual treatments for those seeking healing. Currently, there are approximately 300,000 members of the Christian Science Church in America.

First Century House Churches

The First-Century House Church was Patterned After Synagogues

Ancient Synagogues

Ancient synagogues were small compared with modern cathedrals and churches. Only those living within a “Sabbath day’s journey” (2000 feet) attended. Everyone sat in a square. *Everyone who attended the synagogue was expected to be involved.*

Every male 12 & older was expected to read the scriptures. It was part of his religious training. He was given this opportunity to read a scripture he didn’t understand and get the help of the elderly men in the synagogue. As the next person in line, the young man would stand in the center of the synagogue and read so that everyone could see and hear him. It was the scriptures, not the one reading them, that was exalted. In this way, each male over the age of 12 equally took turns reading a short portion from the holy scriptures and then sat down. After the scriptures were read, every man who desired to do so took turns responding to what was read. After everyone was finished speaking and responding in an orderly fashion, the next person in line to read would stand in the middle, read a short portion of scripture, sit down, and so forth.



The First Century House Church

While the apostles were still alive, **the church was the people who believed in Jesus Christ and** met for worship *in the home* of one of the believers.

Everyone sat in a square or circle. The one next to read stood in the center so everyone in the house could see and hear what was being read. The most prized writings were the four gospels, the letters of Paul or one of the other eyewitnesses of Jesus Christ after the resurrection—the Apostles.

Do you want to understand the Scriptures?

Each male over the age of 12 took turns reading a short portion of the scriptures. He read something that he wanted help to understand and then sat down. Then, all the older Christians took turns in an orderly fashion, from youngest to oldest, responding to what was read. After everyone had finished speaking and edifying one another, the next person read from the scriptures something that he wanted help to understand and then sat down, and so forth.

The Early Christian Church

A young man has just finished reading a few verses from the scriptures (usually less than 2 minutes' worth of reading), and sits down. Everyone is sitting in a circle or a square; There are only a couple dozen people in the home. Everyone, in an orderly fashion, from youngest to oldest, took turns sharing what the Holy Ghost had put in their hearts concerning what they heard while the scriptures were being read. There was an elder present who would speak up if an error was made. These first-century house meetings were intensely interesting. No one knew what topics or what scriptures would be discussed in advance. Everyone was given a chance to read the scriptures, and they needed help understanding and had an opportunity to practice answering to defend their faith—every week. The house church trained everyone on how to be Christians and defend the faith.

After Reading the Scriptures, There Is A “Love Feast”

After everyone had their fill of scriptures and edified each other, the women presented to the whole church a love feast filled with all manner of delicious food. While the bread is being passed around and eaten, everyone remembers the broken body of Jesus Christ on the Cross. While the fruit of the vine is being passed around the room for everyone to drink from, the church remembers the blood of Jesus that was sprinkled around the Cross for 6 hours for their sins.

How the Early Church Used the Money That Was Collected

By the time church ends everyone has had a chance to talk to one another and is intimately acquainted with each other's lives. Is all caught up on what happened during the week. Help is offered to any of the poor who need it, and no one goes away wanting anything.

The collections were made for the poor, the widows and the fatherless, and anyone else that had a desperate need. No one had to worry about their daily needs.

Love Your Neighbor

Go two thousand feet in every direction from your home, which is about 4 city blocks. Knock on every neighbor's door, and find as many Christians as you can. Then invite them to your home! Ask each family to bring their bibles and a dish of food to share with everyone after the Bible reading & open discussion. Go from house to house giving each family an opportunity to host the home church in their own homes each week, and take up collections to help the poor and needy in your community.

Ye Are Taught of God to Love One Another.

Next, imagine the unbelievers in town and how they would sit up and take notice. The Christians in town help each other, meet in each other's homes, and love each other. The Christians help the poor, no one that has any need among them is neglected. Christians eat together and are more like a family, than in modern churches.

Invite Your Neighbors to Your Home

Finally imagine how easy it is, to invite unbelievers to visit your home for a meal. Invite them to observe a Bible reading, and enjoy a feast afterward. Who among the thousands of lonely people in your town could turn an offer like that down?

Are there too many for one house church? That is okay! It's time to grow into a community of house churches! Trust each house church to God, that the Holy Spirit will lead each one of them. Where two or three are gathered in Jesus's name, Jesus is there!

What Do You Need to Get Started?

All you need to start a home church is the Holy Bible. If you have a Bible you have everything you need. Invite other Christians and take turns going from house to house. Each able family should bring delicious food to share with everyone afterward. Make sure there is bread and grape juice! Make the time to share the bread and grape juice special. Take up a collection to be used for the poor in your community and also for missionary outreach in your area.

How To Discover Truth?

1. Set aside all preconceived ideas. Opinions don't matter! The Holy Bible is the only source of truth!
2. **Find 100% of the verses in the Holy Bible on each topic discussed. Don't leave a single verse out!**
3. Believe whatever the Bible says. Conclusions must always line up with 100% of the Bible's verses discovered during Step #2

A Helpful Example: There are approximately 60 verses that discuss what happens at death in the Bible. 95% of these verses teach the exact same thing, so clearly that a child can see it and understand them. Then on the opposite side, there are 1-2 verses that appear to teach something different. So what is the truth? Obviously, we ought to take our stand with the weightier 95% of these verses and what they teach us. The 5% or 1-2 verses that appear to teach something different need to be studied more carefully. In the end, it is always demonstrated that there is 100% unity in the scriptures. Preconceived ideas from what we have been taught over a lifetime might have been preventing us from seeing it.

Most of the major topics in the Bible have 30-40 verses that mention them.

1. **Step 1.** Set aside all preconceived ideas. Opinions don't matter! The Holy Bible is the only source of truth!
2. **Step 2. Find 100% of the 30-40 verses that speak about the topic being discussed.**
3. **Step 3.** Then, determine what 95% of these verses clearly teach and believe whatever those verses teach. After you study the other 5% of these verses more closely, you will always discover 100% unity in the scriptures on every topic.

How Heresy Occurs.

There will always be someone who stubbornly holds on to the "5% or 1-2 verses" and ignores the "95% or 35+ verses" and will not be convinced no matter how many bible texts you show them. That is one way that heresies come into the church.

Hero Worship

Another way heresies enter the church is through "hero worship." A famous church father or person from Church History writes or says something, and no matter how many verses you show them from the Holy Bible, they won't go against their favorite church hero. Do not be deceived by them. This type of person is NOT "a Bible-alone Christian."

Romans 16:17 ¶ Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offenses contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

Do not argue or debate with a heretic; rather, reject them from your home!

Titus 3:10. A man that is an heretick after the first and second admonition reject;

House Churches the Only Churches in the Bible

The Apostles Started House Churches; they were not the Builders of Grand Cathedrals.

Acts 2:46-47 And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread **from house to house**, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And **the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.**

Acts 8:3 As for Saul, he made havock of **the church, entering into every house**, and haling men and women committed *them* to prison.

Romans 16:5 Likewise *greet the church that is in their house.* Salute my wellbeloved Epaphroditus, who is the firstfruits of Achaia unto Christ.

1 Corinthians 16:19 ¶ The churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with **the church that is in their house.**

Colossians 4:15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and **the church which is in his house.**

1 Timothy 3:5 (For if a man know not how to rule **his own house**, how shall he take care of **the church of God**?)

1 Timothy 3:15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in **the house of God**, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

Philemon 2 And to *our* beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellowsoldier, and **to the church in thy house:**

Houses that Followed Peter Were Not Set Above Other Houses

1 Corinthians 1:11-13 For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them *which are of the house of Chloe*, that there are contentions among you. Now this I say, that **every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas; and I of Christ. Is Christ divided?** was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

1 Corinthians 2:2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.

1 Corinthians 3:3-6 For ye are yet carnal: for whereas *there is* among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men? **For while one saith, I am of Paul; and another, I am of Apollos; are ye not carnal?** ¶ Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man? I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase.

1 Corinthians 3:9 For we are labourers together with God: **ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building.**

1 Corinthians 3:22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; **all are yours;**

1 Corinthians 4:6 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myself and to Apollos for your sakes; that ye might **learn in us not to think of men above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another.**



START A HOUSE CHURCH IN YOUR HOME



PRAY TOGETHER. Update a Prayer List, With Answers to Prayer, & New Prayer Requests.



NO SERMONS! NO BIBLE TEACHERS TAKE TURNS READING THE BIBLE



SING HYMNS TOGETHER



LOVE YOUR NEIGHBOR
INVITE FAMILY, FRIENDS, COWORKERS & NEIGHBORS



HOST A HOUSE CHURCH IN YOUR OWN HOME



Potluck Dinner
EAT BREAD AND DRINK WINE (GRAPE JUICE), TOGETHER



TAKE UP COLLECTIONS FOR THE POOR, DO GOOD WORKS!



Baptise All That Believe in Jesus Christ, and Repent of Their Sins



"I have written unto you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator... with such an one no not to eat." 1 Corinthians 5:11

How to do a “House Church” or Home Bible Study Group

All that is needed is your Bibles. A pastor and a sermon is not necessary! You can study topically or work your way through a book of the Bible, one verse at a time.

1. Start by inviting people you see regularly to “join some friends and our families for a Bible study. There will be a meal afterward.”
2. Start with prayer requests, write them down, and update the list each week.
3. Read and study the Bible. Every male over the age of 12, take turns reading a verse or two. Allow the young men to choose something they want help understanding. In an orderly fashion, starting with the young men, working your way up to the elderly, find related verses that can help explain and discuss what was read.
4. Gather a collection / financial offerings to help anyone in need, especially those of your own house church.
5. Remember the body and blood of Christ, examine yourselves, wait for each other to be ready, then enjoy a meal together,

“Not for that we have dominion over your faith” 2 Corinthians 1:24

“For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.”
Matthew 18:20

Q. Which Church Do You Go To?

- “I go to the church at the house of My family and I are followers of Christ. We are called Christians.”

“All Ye Are Brethren”

But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, *even Christ*; and **all ye are brethren**. And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, *even Christ*. **Matthew 23:8-10**

Evangelists, Bishops, Elders & Deacons

Evangelists

Acts 6:1-7 ¶ And in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration. **Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples *unto them*, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables.** Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word. And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and **they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch:** Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid *their*

hands on them. And **the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.**

Acts 21:8 ¶ And the next *day* we that were of Paul's company departed, and came unto Caesarea: and we entered into the house of **Philip the evangelist, which was one of the seven; and abode with him.**

Ephesians 4:11 And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, **evangelists;** and some, pastors and teachers;

2 Timothy 4:5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, **do the work of an evangelist,** make full proof of thy ministry.

Bishops

Timothy 3:1-7 ¶ This *is* a true saying, If a man desire **the office of a bishop**, he desireth a good work. **A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach; Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous; One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity;** (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?) **Not a novice**, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil. Moreover he must have a good report of them which are without; lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

Acts 20:28 Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which **the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.**

Philippians 1:1 ¶ Paul and Timotheus, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, **with the bishops** and deacons:

1 Timothy 3:2 **A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach;**

2 Timothy 4:22 The Lord Jesus Christ *be* with thy spirit. Grace *be* with you. Amen. The second *epistle* unto **Timotheus, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Ephesians**, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

Titus 1:7 For a **bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not selfwilled, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre;**

Titus 3:15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the faith. Grace *be* with you all. Amen. It was written to **Titus, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Cretians**, from Nicopolis of Macedonia.

1 Peter 2:25 For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto **the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls**.

Elders

1 Timothy 5:1 ¶ Rebuke not **an elder**, but intreat *him* as a father; *and* the younger men as brethren;

1 Timothy 5:17 Let **the elders that rule well** be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

1 Timothy 5:19 Against **an elder** receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses.

Titus 1:5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that are wanting, and **ordain elders in every city**, as I had appointed thee:

Hebrews 11:1-2 ¶ Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. For **by it the elders obtained a good report**.

James 5:14 Is any sick among you? let him **call for the elders of the church**; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord:

1 Peter 5:1 ¶ The elders which are among you **I exhort, who am also an elder**, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed:

1 Peter 5:5 ¶ Likewise, ye younger, **submit yourselves unto the elder**. Yea, all *of you* be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.

2 John 1 ¶ **The elder** unto the elect lady and her children, whom I love in the truth; and not I only, but also all they that have known the truth;

3 John 1 ¶ **The elder** unto the wellbeloved Gaius, whom I love in the truth.

Deacons

Philippians 1:1 ¶ Paul and Timotheus, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons:

1 Timothy 3:8-13 ¶ Likewise *must* the deacons *be* grave, not doubletongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre; Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience. And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being *found* blameless. Even so *must their wives be* grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things. Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well. For they that have used the office of a deacon well purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

Ministers & Pastors

“All Ye Are Brethren”

But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, *even* Christ; and **all ye are brethren**. And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, *even* Christ. **Matthew 23:8-10**

2 Chronicles 15:3 Now for a long season Israel *hath been* without the true God, and without a teaching priest, and without law.

Jeremiah 3:15 And I will give you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.

Jeremiah 17:16 As for me, I have not hastened from *being* a pastor to follow thee: neither have I desired the woeful day; thou knowest: **that which came out of my lips was *right* before thee.**

Matthew 28:20 **Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you:** and, lo, I am with you *always, even unto the end of the world.* Amen.

Acts 13:1 ¶ Now there were **in the church that was at Antioch** certain prophets and teachers; as **Barnabas, and Simeon** that was called Niger, and **Lucius** of Cyrene, and **Manaen**, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and **Saul**.

Romans 12:7 Or ministry, ***let us wait on our ministering:*** or he that teacheth, **on teaching;**

1 Corinthians 12:29 Are all apostles? are all prophets? ***are all teachers?*** are all workers of miracles?

Hebrews 5:12 For when for the time **ye ought to be teachers**, ye have need that one teach you again which *be* the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.

1 Peter 5:1-3 ¶ The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight *thereof*, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; Neither as being lords over *God's* heritage, but being ensamples to the flock.

Not Greedy of Filthy Lucre

Isaiah 56:11 Yea, *they are greedy dogs which can never have enough, and they are shepherds that cannot understand*: they all look to their own way, **every one for his gain**, from his quarter.

1 Timothy 3:3 Not given to wine, no striker, **not greedy of filthy lucre**; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous;

1 Timothy 3:8 ¶ Likewise *must* the deacons *be* grave, not doubletongued, not given to much wine, **not greedy of filthy lucre**;

Titus 1:7 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not selfwilled, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, **not given to filthy lucre**;

Titus 1:11 Whose mouths must be stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, **for filthy lucre's sake**.

1 Peter 5:2 Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight *thereof*, not by constraint, but willingly; **not for filthy lucre**, but of a ready mind;

Jude 11 Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and **ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward**, and perished in the gainsaying of Core.

Not Adorned with Costly Array & Jewelry

Matthew 11:7-8 ¶ And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, *What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing are in kings' houses.*

1 Timothy 2:9-10 ¶ In like manner also, **that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array**; But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works.

1 Peter 3:1-6 ¶ Likewise, ye wives, *be* in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; While they behold your chaste conversation *coupled* with fear. **Whose adorning let it not be that outward *adorning* of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel;** But *let it be* the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, *even the ornament* of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price. For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands: Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters ye are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

Preach the Word—Not Philosophy & Fables

Colossians 2:8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

Deuteronomy 6:12 *Then* beware lest thou forget the LORD, which brought thee forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage.

Matthew 7:15 ¶ Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

Matthew 10:17 But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues;

Matthew 16:6 Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

Philippians 3:2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision.

2 Peter 3:17 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know *these things* before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness.

Colossians 2:18 Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind,

Song of Solomon 2:15 Take us the foxes, the little foxes, that spoil the vines: for our vines *have* tender grapes.

Jeremiah 29:8 ¶ For thus saith the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Let not your prophets and your diviners, that *be* in the midst of you, deceive you, neither hearken to your dreams which ye cause to be dreamed.

Romans 16:17 ¶ Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.

Ephesians 5:6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience.

Hebrews 13:9 Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines. For *it is* a good thing that the heart be established with grace; not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.

2 John 8 Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward.

Acts 17:18 Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountered him. And some said, What will this babbler say? other some, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection.

Acts 17:32 ¶ And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others said, We will hear thee again of this *matter*.

Romans 1:21-22 Because that, when they knew God, they glorified *him* not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools,

1 Corinthians 1:19-23 For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where *is* the wise? where *is* the scribe? where *is* the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumblingblock, and unto the Greeks foolishness;

1 Corinthians 3:18-19 ¶ Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness.

1 Corinthians 15:35-36 ¶ But some *man* will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? *Thou* fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die:

2 Corinthians 10:5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;

1 Timothy 6:20 O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane *and* vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called:

2 Timothy 2:17 And their word will eat as doth a canker: of whom is Hymenaeus and Philetus;

2 Timothy 2:18 Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and overthrow the faith of some.

2 Timothy 3:13 But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

Not after the commandments and doctrines of men

Colossians 2:22 Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men?

Matthew 15:2-9 Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread. But he answered and said unto them, *Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition? For God commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.*

Mark 7:3-13 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash *their* hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. And *when they come* from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, *as* the washing of cups, and pots, brassen vessels, and of tables. Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands? He answered and said unto them, *Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me. Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do. And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death: But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; he shall be free. And ye suffer him no more*

to do ought for his father or his mother; Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.

Galatians 1:14 And profited in the Jews' religion above many my equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

Your Adversary the Devil, as a Roaring Lion—Part 1.

By David Michael Curtis

David Michael Curtis wrote the document "Your Adversary the Devil, as a Roaring Lion, Walketh About, Seeking Whom He May Devour—Part 1." It discusses various topics related to Christian beliefs and practices, particularly the author's interpretation of scripture and critique of modern churches.

Key points from the document include:

- **Emphasis on house churches:** The author advocates for Christians to meet in independent house churches rather than established denominations to avoid heresy.
- **Critique of paid ministers:** The document argues against paid ministers, stating that they have no scriptural basis and that church funds should be used to support widows, orphans, and prisoners.
- **Authority of scripture:** The author emphasizes the Bible's authority and criticizes selective interpretation of its teachings.
- **Warning against Bible universities:** The document expresses skepticism towards ministers who attended Bible universities, citing Jesus's command not to call anyone "rabbi" or "teacher."
- **Disorderly conduct:** The author discusses the concept of "disorderly conduct" in the context of those who refuse to work and support their families, including paid ministers in their view.
- **Rejection of the Levitical priesthood analogy:** The document refutes the argument that modern ministers should be supported like Levitical priests of the Old Testament.

In essence, the document presents a specific interpretation of Christian teachings, advocating for a return to what the author believes is the early Church's original model.

Dear Friends,

Introduction: A Precarious Situation.

Be sober and vigilant, for your adversary, the devil, seeks to devour you like a lion. This message may come across as cynical, but I cannot ignore the precarious situation we find ourselves in. We are at the end of the world, and countless denominations teach a multitude of different doctrines, making the situation incomprehensible. Every Church is divided from every other Church, except under the guise of ecumenism. This promotes the idea that we should overlook each other's doctrinal differences in the name of unity and tolerate these differences.

The Early Church Model vs. Established Institutions.

I emphasize that Jesus warned us to be aware of the teachings of religious leaders. When the apostles started the Church, they could have chosen to be disciples of the rabbis in established synagogues. However, that was not the path they took. The disciples of Jesus Christ, who began the churches around the Roman Empire, chose to follow the apostolic doctrine and started house churches. They remained separate from the Jewish synagogues.

While rabbis had many valuable teachings that were beneficial, early Christians did not gather in synagogues; instead, they met in homes. They were not disciples of the rabbis and distinguished themselves from Judaism and the established institutional Church of Israel by meeting in houses. This choice laid the foundation for the Church, and the gates of Hell cannot prevail against it.

Deviation in Modern Churches and the Need for Separation.

Modern-day churches have strayed from this foundation. If we were to meet in houses that are not connected through a denomination but independent, each with its own elder and deacon, we would be returning to the original model established by Christ and the Apostles.

Each Church is quarantined, much like during COVID-19 when people were on lockdown to prevent the virus from spreading from house to house. While Christians are called to love one another, that's not the type of separation I'm referring to.

Quarantine from Heresy.

What I'm suggesting is that if we gather in house churches, we are quarantined from heresy, false doctrines, and false prophets. We need to shield ourselves from other gospels. By shutting down platforms like YouTube, TikTok, and Facebook, as well as avoiding all sermons, we can protect ourselves from the various teachings that are out there. Instead, we should focus on forming house churches to ensure we are safe from the infection of heresy. Heresy can be dangerous and could lead to condemnation on Judgment Day.

Understanding the Modern Christian Landscape.

I want to distinguish my message from the idea of unity among Christians and the love we have for one another. It's essential to highlight that we should not be gullible or carried away by every wind of doctrine. Today, my message may seem cynical. Still, I want to share my views on the modern Christian landscape, including the various institutional churches and denominations, as well as the ministers who are paid to deliver sermons and have attended Bible universities.

Critique of Paid Ministers.

I want to surprise those who may not have heard my perspective: I advise avoiding ministers who are paid to preach sermons. Why? First, a pastor, bishop, elder, and presbyter all refer to the same office; there is no scriptural example of elders delivering paid sermons. In fact, we read that financial support should only be extended to individuals who are in prison and unable to work for themselves. In the first century, if someone was imprisoned, it was typically their loved ones and friends who supplied for their needs, or else they went hungry.

Support for Prisoners in the Early Church.

The Roman Empire did not provide food or clothing for prisoners. This was the case during the time of Paul, Timothy, and the early evangelists who traveled to spread their message. As a result of their faithful ministry, they were often imprisoned. They relied on house churches to meet their needs, such as providing a coat to keep them warm or money for food. Unfortunately, many of these house churches overlooked the Apostle Paul's needs during his imprisonment. According to Scripture, only the Philippians extended their support to him.

Paul's Example: Self-Sufficiency.

Under normal circumstances, Paul did not ask for donations. He was a tentmaker by trade, which allowed him to support himself and also provide for his companions who traveled with him for years. He set an example by not wanting to give anyone the impression that he preached Christ for monetary gain. Therefore, whenever he was free to travel as an evangelist, he worked hard to provide for himself. He instructed the churches he established to do the same. He urged the men in these house churches to find work to support their families and, by extension, to care for widows and orphans who had no earthly support after losing their husbands.

True Religion: Caring for the Needy.

James pointed out that true religion is caring for widows and orphans. This care is essential because they often lack any support, much like prisoners in the first century. Offerings

collected on the first day of the week were to aid those without other means of support. This is what money was intended for.

Biblical Use of Church Funds.

Elders, who were non-disabled men, were expected to have jobs to support their families and, in turn, assist widows and orphans resulting from the loss of spouses. Additionally, house churches contributed financial assistance to other churches facing difficulties, such as famine. For example, a famine had been prophesied that would affect many across the Roman Empire, especially in Jerusalem. Collections were taken on the first day of the week and sent to Jerusalem to help those struggling during this crisis.

Contrast with Modern Compensation Practices.

This trend highlights that money was primarily used to assist individuals who could not support themselves. However, when possible, individuals were expected to support themselves through employment and take care of their families.

In contrast, consider modern-day elders, often referred to as pastors or ministers. Generally, they lead worship services once or twice a week, which may involve only a few hours of work and some additional hours of preparation. During the rest of the week, they have a lot of free time and are often not employed in jobs that support their families. Instead, they may rely on funds from church collections, commonly referred to as the widow and orphan fund. These funds were originally intended for those with no means of support, such as evangelists in prison or widows and orphans.

Departure from the Apostolic Model.

The early house churches founded by Peter, Paul, and Apollos collected this money specifically for those in need, not for non-disabled men who were simply elders of the Church. The expectation was not to pay for all the expenses of the elders in these house churches. What we see today with paid clergy is contrary to what is found in Scripture. Many of these men are not struggling to provide for themselves; they are instead living out what Paul refers to as disorderly conduct. They may feel free to avoid work and depend on church offerings during the week.

The Authority of Scripture.

It's important to understand that what I'm sharing isn't just a recommendation; it is a commandment from the Apostle Paul. He stated that his writings are the commandments of God. If you read Paul's letters and view his commandments as optional, then you are not interpreting them correctly. The New Testament should be approached with the understanding that it is authoritative and carries greater weight than any earthly authority.

Disrespectful Bible Interpretation.

Unfortunately, many people read the Bible disrespectfully, sifting through its teachings to claim some are applicable while disregarding others. They may follow the teachings they like and ignore those they don't. This selective approach undermines the authority of Scripture.

Foundation for Studying Scripture.

The foundation for studying the Scriptures must include recognizing that the Bible is the Word of God and is authoritative. Christ is the head of the Church, and one of His titles is the Word of God. The Word became flesh, and the Holy Spirit inspired the Scriptures so we can know God, His Son Jesus Christ, and His will for our lives.

It is essential to establish that the Bible is inspired and holds greater authority than anyone on Earth. When reading the writings of the apostles, remember that they are not merely human commandments but divine commandments from God, inspired by the Holy Spirit.

Commandment Regarding Disorderly Conduct.

Now that we have laid this foundation, let's return to our discussion. Paul commanded that if a man is walking disorderly—in this context, referring to a man unwilling to work and provide for his family—then do not associate with him. In other words, expel him from the church community until he finds employment. Paul stated that anyone who does not work and provide for their family is worse than an infidel.

Consequences of Refusal to Work.

This is not an optional message. The Apostle Paul commands that if anyone in the Church is living disorderly—refusing to work and take care of their family—you must cease fellowship with him. Expel him from the Church until he corrects this behavior.

Paid Ministers as Disorderly.

So far, we have discussed that paid ministers are behaving disorderly. They are relying on funds intended for widows and orphans while refusing to work. Despite delivering a sermon once or twice a week, they expect a full-time salary, which is contrary to the Biblical model where elders were not compensated or had their expenses covered simply for being elders.

Biblical Instruction on Supporting Families.

The apostle Paul instructed the House church that men should have jobs and take care of their own families. Families should not be a burden on the Church. Paul gave explicit instructions that collections were meant to support widows and orphans—those who could not provide for themselves, especially during times when other churches were experiencing famines. This is what the Bible teaches about money, and it's quite straightforward.

Consequences of Fellowship with Disorderly Men.

To be candid, if a man refuses to work and expects to receive a full-time salary simply for preaching a sermon once a week, then, according to Scripture, I am not allowed to fellowship with him. I cannot share a meal with him. When the Bible discusses avoiding eating with someone, it specifically refers to avoiding sharing the Lord's Supper with that person. This means you should not participate in communion with someone who won't work, who refuses to get a job and labor with his own hands to provide for himself and his family. Doing so would be a violation of one of the commandments given by the apostle Paul.

Paid Ministers and False Prophets.

Furthermore, it's important to note that there are men in ministry who expect a full-time salary, and these individuals often fall under the description of false prophets. Study the New Testament accounts of false prophets. You will find that they tend to expect a full-time salary and, in fact, often demand an excessive amount of wealth for holding their office or performing ministry in the name of Jesus Christ. So, if someone is being paid to be in ministry, I am inclined to assume that they are a false prophet because the Bible warns that these individuals pursue ministry for financial gain.

False Prophets vs. Elders and Deacons.

On one hand, the New Testament clearly describes false prophets who preach Christ for "filthy lucre's" sake—meaning for money. On the other hand, we have elders and deacons, the only two offices in the House church. There is no example in the New Testament of elders and deacons receiving a full-time salary simply for occupying these positions. These roles were voluntary, and they held no authority outside of their own House church. Their office as Elder or Deacon was specifically for that individual House church, serving a small number of people who gathered in a living room to engage in discussion together.

The Role of Elders in the Early Church.

Elders were not the center of attention. They did not preach sermons, nor were they compensated for their position. Instead, they voluntarily served the house church out of love, not for money but for the love of Christ and His Church, which met in someone's home or perhaps from house to house.

Skepticism Towards Bible University Graduates.

The next point I want to share may surprise many people. If your paid minister has gone to a Bible university, I am skeptical of them. I won't listen to their teachings or sermons. Why? Because I am a Christian, I believe that the teachings of Jesus Christ are the commandments

of God. Jesus is the Lord; He is the King of Kings and the Lord of Lords. He is not merely making suggestions; His teachings are commands that deserve to be obeyed.

Approaching the Gospels with Respect.

You must approach the Gospels with a healthy respect for Jesus Christ. If you don't start with the understanding that Jesus is the head of the Church and has authority as the King of Kings, then you might as well stop reading the Bible. If you approach the teachings of Jesus with an attitude that allows you to pick and choose what to follow, you're just creating a version of Jesus in your imagination. On Judgment Day, you will meet the real Jesus, not the one you've imagined. You won't encounter a custom-made Jesus who caters to your whims; rather, you will face Jesus and everything He taught.

Following Jesus and the Apostles, Not Men.

So, why don't I listen to ministers who have attended Bible university? It's because, as a Christian, I am commanded not to make any man my rabbi or teacher. Instead, I am called to study the Scriptures and follow Jesus Christ. I don't want to have any disciples or followers for myself. What I truly desire is for you to pick up your Bible and listen to Jesus above all else. I urge you to study His teachings and implement them, just as Mary at the wedding feast said, "Whatever He tells you to do, do it." That is my message: you should be following Jesus Christ.

Secondly, if you choose to follow anyone else, it should be the eyewitnesses, the apostles, who wrote the New Testament. Their writings represent the commandments of God. Outside of Jesus Christ and the apostles, I encourage you to be skeptical of every church father, minister, televangelist, and author. Anyone who is not an author of the New Testament should be viewed with caution.

Warning Against False Prophets and Secret Gatherings.

Jesus warned us about false prophets and false Christs. He said that if someone claims to possess Christ in a secret place, we should not go forth. In my small town of Arcadia, with around 8,000 residents, there's a church on almost every corner claiming to have Christ and inviting people to enter their private spaces to learn about Him. Jesus warned us that there would be many false Christs and prophets and instructed us not to go into secret rooms. Do not call anyone your rabbi or make any man your teacher; follow Christ.

Direct Access to Scripture.

Jesus Christ ordained the apostles, personally selecting them, including the apostle Paul. As followers, we ought to listen to the teachings of the apostles and Jesus Christ directly. We don't need an intercessor between us and the Bible.

Bible Universities Contradict Jesus' Command.

You might wonder why I don't listen to the teachings of people who have attended Bible universities. The reason is that they learned under certain professors, whom they refer to as doctors, theologians, or scholars. The entire act of attending a Bible university and studying under a professor contradicts a clear commandment of Jesus Christ. He instructed us not to call anyone "rabbi." I challenge you to reconcile this: Jesus said not to become anyone's disciple. Yet, the very premise of attending a Bible university is to become a disciple of the professors there, effectively making them your rabbi. This situation violates the commandment given by Jesus Christ.

Distinction from Judaism and Synagogue Practices.

As a Christian, it's important to recognize that the apostles and the early Church did not attend the synagogues or learn from the teachings of the rabbis. Jesus warned against learning from the Pharisees, Sadducees, scribes, and lawyers. He explicitly told his disciples to avoid these sources of learning.

Early Church Gatherings and Leadership.

In the early Church, there was a clear distinction between Christians and Jews. Christians separated themselves and met in homes, where they had elders and deacons who were not financially compensated for their service. They served their local house church, which typically consisted of less than 35 people. Just like everyone else, they sat on the floor in the living room. These individuals were not the center of attention and did not deliver sermons; the practice of bishops giving sermons began in the 4th century, which is a historical fact.

Contrast with Modern Church Structures and Lifestyles.

There were no pulpit or pews in these gatherings. Everyone participated equally; they discussed matters, sang together, prayed together, and shared meals. No one person dominated the proceedings. This is why it makes sense that the early Church did not single out someone like an elder for a full-time salary or to cover extravagant expenses. There was no push to ensure anyone had a lavish lifestyle, like buying a mansion or a \$35 million jet for extravagant vacations around the world.

Example of Extravagance.

Benny Hinn is known to stay at some of the most expensive hotels in the world, particularly in Dubai, where he stays on the top floor, which costs \$1 million a night. This extravagant lifestyle is a common practice for him. However, the Scriptures teach that we should collect for people experiencing poverty, including widows and orphans. Benny Hinn is living a life

that would make kings blush, and he is doing so by relying on funds meant for widows and orphans.

Discernment Regarding Paid Ministry.

The Bible warns us about false prophets who preach Christ for financial gain. If someone is receiving money for what they call ministry, I do not listen to them. Jesus cautioned us about false prophets and false Christs, instructing us not to heed their calls.

Application of Scriptural Commands.

We should have a healthy respect for the Bible as the Word of God. When Jesus and the apostles issue commands, we ought to follow their teachings and apply them to our lives. In the case of someone who is being paid for ministry, much like false prophets do, we must be discerning. If rabbis have taught a person and they merely mimic their teachings without original thought, we must be cautious. The Bible instructs us not to associate with such individuals. If they refuse to work with their hands, despite being capable, the Bible advises us not to eat with them and to reject them from our homes.

Addressing the Levitical Priesthood Argument.

Preaching a message like this positions me against every minister on the planet. I don't expect anyone in ministry to support or agree with my perspective; in fact, I anticipate they will oppose it vehemently. One argument they might raise is that the Levitical priests were supported by tithes collected from all of Israel, suggesting that ministers today should also be supported in this way.

The Abolishment of the Old Covenant.

However, this argument is flawed. The Levitical priests performed services at the temple, which was abolished in 70 AD when the temple was destroyed. The sacrifice of Jesus Christ fulfilled all the services that the temple represented. We no longer need priests to offer animal sacrifices or perform cleansing rituals. Everything the temple stood for has been satisfied and fulfilled through the one offering of Jesus Christ, allowing everyone, not just the Levitical priests, to have their sins washed away through direct faith in Him. We do not require an intercessor standing between us and God to perform services at a temple or sanctuary. The entire system established by the Law of Moses has been abolished.

The Church is Not Israel.

Every individual is capable of hearing the gospel, believing in it, and, by the grace of God, responding with repentance, water baptism, and receiving the Holy Spirit. They can be sealed until the day of redemption and bear fruit. Everyone can do this without a Levitical priest. The pastor preaching a sermon is not a priest in the sense of the law of Moses. We

need to understand that the old covenant has been abolished; it is no longer in effect. We are not the nation of Israel; we are Christians—the Church.

Tithes were for the Levitical Priests at the Temple.

The nation of Israel collected tithes from all that they produced and gave those tithes to the Levitical priests, who were set apart to perform duties and services at the sanctuary. That system no longer exists; the temple was destroyed in 70 AD. If you want to give a tithe, there is no one to give it to, as tithes were commanded to be given to Levitical priests at the temple.

Absence of Levitical Priests Today.

If you go to Jerusalem looking for the temple, you won't find it. Search the world over for Levitical priests, and you won't find them. Their genealogical records were destroyed when the temple was destroyed, making it impossible for anyone to trace their lineage back to Aaron or Levi. Without genealogical records to verify descent from the tribe of Levi, there are no Levitical priests. Therefore, if you want to give a tithe, you would need to find a Levite. Your minister is not a Levite; if he claims he is, ask for genealogical records proving he can trace his ancestry back to the tribe of Levi. If he cannot provide that proof, you do not owe him a tithe.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Your Adversary the Devil, as a Roaring Lion—Part 2.

By David Michael Curtis

"Your Adversary the Devil, as a Roaring Lion, Walketh About, Seeking Whom He May Devour—Part 2.pdf" is an article written by David Michael Curtis.

The document discusses several key points:

- **Paid Ministers vs. Unpaid Elders and Deacons:** The document argues that elders and deacons in the early Church were not paid, whereas paid ministers are a modern concept. It questions the use of the scripture "the laborer is worthy of his hire" to justify salaries for church leaders.
- **False Shepherds and True Men of God:** It distinguishes between those who are called pastors and those who truly follow the Bible's teachings. True men of God must obey, study, and follow the Bible, not just deliver good teachings.
- **Reliance on Christ vs. Human Teachers:** The document emphasizes relying on Christ and the Holy Spirit for guidance rather than intermediaries or human teachers. It cautions against ministers who demand unquestioning obedience and assert authority superior to others.
- **Financial Motivations of Paid Ministers:** It suggests that paid ministers might be inclined to defend their position due to financial reliance on church offerings.
- **House Churches vs. Institutional Churches:** The article promotes the idea of gathering in house churches rather than attending institutional churches, suggesting that house churches protect families from "heresy" and "false teachings."
- **Personal Study of the Bible:** It encourages individuals to study the Bible for themselves and verify teachings with scripture, following the example of the Bereans in Acts 17:11.
- **The Danger of Heresy:** The document likens heresy to a virus that spreads through false prophets and encourages individuals to protect their families from it.
- **Personal Experience and Unpaid Ministry:** David Michael Curtis shares his personal experience of choosing not to be a paid minister, working for a living (DoorDash), and sharing his teachings freely without asking for donations.
- **Critique of Bible Universities and Paid Sermons:** The article expresses concerns about ministers who have been educated at Bible universities and those who receive full-time salaries for delivering sermons.

- **Rejection of Denomination Building:** David Michael Curtis explains that he intentionally avoids starting a new denomination and does not seek personal gain from his teachings.

In essence, the document advocates for a return to what the author believes are the practices of the early Church, emphasizing personal Bible study, house churches, and unpaid ministry, while warning against false teachers and the influence of modern institutional churches.

Dear Friends,

Addressing "The Laborer is Worthy of His Hire."

Next, let's consider how a paid minister might respond to the argument that "the laborer is worthy of his hire." First, we should examine the context in which this was stated. The Apostle Paul was in a tight situation, imprisoned in Rome, where prisoners were not provided food. This warranted support from house churches.

Paid Ministers vs. Unpaid Elders and Deacons.

It's important to note that elders and deacons in the early Church were not paid; they did not receive a salary. In fact, in modern churches, those considered elders and deacons typically volunteer their service and consider it an honor to serve in those roles. They do not expect to be compensated. The only individuals who typically expect payment are ministers and administrators.

Misapplication of Scripture for Compensation.

Therefore, using the argument that "the laborer is worthy of his hire" does not effectively support the idea that elders and deacons should receive salaries. If one concludes that elders and deacons ought to be paid and receive full-time salaries, then all elders and deacons worldwide should begin to receive such salaries. However, I am not aware of any churches that follow this practice; none that I know of provide salaries for these offices.

The Role of a Pastor and False Shepherds.

A pastor is essentially a shepherd. The term "pastor" refers to someone who guides and cares for a congregation, much like a shepherd does for their flock. However, it's important to recognize that there are false shepherds and false prophets among those who claim to be pastors. Just because someone is called a pastor doesn't mean God ordains them; men have ordained many.

Obeying the Bible, Not Human Teachers.

To be a true man of God requires more than simply delivering good teachings from a pulpit. A man of God must obey the Bible, study it diligently, and follow its teachings. Jesus and the Apostle Paul emphasized that we should not rely on rabbis or teachers in the traditional sense; instead, we should go directly to Christ as the head of the Church. Our dependence should be on Christ and the Holy Spirit, who will guide us into all truth, rather than through an intermediary.

Financial Motivations of Paid Ministers.

A paid minister may feel inclined to defend their position, especially if they have purchased homes, lands, enjoyed vacations, and acquired the latest cars and technology, all funded through offerings from the Church or their followers. This financial reliance may create a reluctance to suggest that they should take on other work to support themselves.

Evaluating Teachers: Compensation and Authority.

In evaluating Bible teachers, it is essential to consider whether they are being compensated for their role and whether they perceive themselves as having authority that is superior to that of others in the Church. A minister who expects unconditional obedience without question mirrors the mindset of the papacy, where church members are expected to follow their priests, bishops, cardinals, and the pope without question.

The Berean Example of Scriptural Verification.

The Apostle Paul provided a different example in Acts 17:11, where he taught, but the Bereans studied the Scriptures to verify whether his teachings were accurate. Paul encouraged this kind of scrutiny. A pastor or minister should not feel threatened by congregants studying Scripture to confirm the truth of their teachings, as Paul welcomed this practice.

Ministers Demanding Unquestioning Obedience.

Unfortunately, I have encountered ministers who insist that we must accept their beliefs and follow their directives solely based on their authority, rather than on the truth of Scripture. Jesus reminded us that we are all brethren and equal, stating that to be the greatest, one must be the servant of all. The apostles demonstrated humility and meekness, while anyone displaying superiority, authority, or a dictatorial attitude, insisting on unquestioning obedience, follows the example of the papacy.

My Beliefs and Encouragement for Personal Study.

I want to clarify my beliefs: I'm not a Roman Catholic; I'm a Bible student. I believe that Jesus is the head of the Church and that the Bible is the ultimate authority for Christians. I

encourage everyone to study the Bible for themselves. If I share something new with you and you're unsure about it, that's perfectly fine. I don't expect anyone to believe it just because I said so, nor do I expect everyone to agree with my interpretations.

Verifying Teachings with Scripture.

However, if you are a Bible student and I present something unfamiliar, I encourage you to study the scriptures like the Bereans did, to see if what I'm saying aligns with the Bible. I want to emphasize the benefits of following Jesus' commandments. If you look at the example in the New Testament, particularly regarding house churches, you'll see that they operated separately from synagogues or institutional churches.

Benefits of House Churches and Avoiding Paid Teachers.

I suggest not relying solely on people who are paid to deliver sermons or who have studied under a rabbi—essentially, the professors. There's no harm in following Jesus' commandments. In fact, there's much benefit. Just as during the COVID-19 lockdown, you were avoiding exposure to a deadly virus, I would liken heresy to a virus as well, spread by false prophets.

Heresy as a Virus.

Am I saying that every paid minister is a false prophet? No, I'm not judging anyone. What I'm doing is teaching what the scriptures say and leaving judgment up to Christ on Judgment Day. I don't know who will be saved or lost, and I hold no ill feelings toward any ministers. I want to express what the Bible teaches and leave the rest to God.

Protecting Family from Heresy.

I encourage you to visualize heresy as a virus. Right now, millions of people are being infected by heretical doctrines. I'm encouraging you to meet in homes to protect your family and loved ones from this heretical virus and to shield them from false teachings. The spread of these heretical ideas is happening faster than a pandemic, fueled by false teachers who are compensated to spread their misleading doctrines.

Safety in House Churches.

If you gather in homes with your family and loved ones and stop listening to mainstream sermons, there is no danger or harm in doing so. In fact, you will benefit by protecting yourself from the spread of false ideas. This approach is not something I invented; it is based on the teachings of the great physician, Christ. The Apostles laid the foundation for house churches, which were established when Jesus taught that we should not call anyone a rabbi. In its most direct context, this meant that early Christians were not to sit under the authority of rabbis in Jewish synagogues.

The Remedy for Heresy: Avoiding Human Rabbis.

To follow this commandment, Christians needed to separate themselves from Jews who met in synagogues and began to gather in house churches. Today, many institutional churches are perpetuating false doctrines that are divisive and filled with heresy. Jesus, the great physician, provided the remedy by instructing us not to refer to anyone as a rabbi or teacher. When you attend an institutional church, you elevate the person at the pulpit to the status of your rabbi or teacher. Many who do this trust everything that person teaches, assuming that because they attended Bible school, they must be knowledgeable.

Clarity Through House Church Setting.

By removing yourself from this dynamic and placing yourself in a house church setting, the scriptures become clearer. Their meanings are easier to understand, and you will see that the Bible accurately describes the world we live in today. The Bible's warnings against false Christs, false prophets, and false teachers accurately portray many modern institutional churches and provide instructions on how to navigate this challenging environment.

Survival Guide: Stop Listening to False Teachers.

To survive this situation, we must stop listening to their teachings, sermons, and books. We should treat these ideas like a pandemic, similar to COVID-19, because that is precisely what is happening: the world is becoming infected with heresies and doctrines of devils. Many people are being reassured of their salvation when they haven't repented, and many haven't even been baptized. This is ultimately between each individual and God, and we're not here to judge anyone.

Following Christ and Separation from the World.

We are simply trying to follow Christ. He wants us to survive in a world that seeks to engulf us, encouraging us to be separate from it. You can look at what the world defines as the Church and realize that it does not align with Scripture, and you can distance yourself from institutional churches and establish a healthy home church.

Treating Heresy as Dangerous.

You should view heresy as something dangerous that your family needs protection from. By ceasing to listen to these sermons and teachings, you can keep your family safe. If someone is being paid to deliver sermons and refuses to get a job to support their family, they are acting in disorder. There is no example in Scripture of elders and deacons having full-time salaries. The concept of labor being worthy of its hire is specifically in reference to Paul when he was in prison, relying on contributions from the Philippian Church to avoid starvation.

Personal Experience and Survival Strategy.

To conclude, everything I've shared reflects my experience in surviving a world filled with heresies and false teachers who represent different versions of Christ and different gospels. I am managing just fine because I have chosen not to be influenced by them. I no longer listen to their sermons or watch their YouTube videos. This applies to local pastors as well—I do not attend their churches or allow myself to be indoctrinated by their teachings.

Following Christ, Not Human Teachers or Paid Ministers.

I follow Christ's commandments and do not allow anyone to take the place of my teacher. I do not trust those who accept money from the widow and orphan fund to preach, nor do I accept teachings from those who have merely repeated what they learned from professors. I do not follow rabbis; I am not anyone's disciple. I am a follower of Jesus Christ. I go directly to the Bible, listen to the apostles, and respect the Bible as authoritative.

Humility as a Bible Student.

I believe the Bible holds more authority than anything I have ever written or preached. If I am wrong, I must forsake that teaching, repent, and align my understanding with Scripture. I do not approach the Bible as a teacher but rather as a student. I am not special; I hold no titles. I am just David, a Bible student. I study the King James Bible, focusing on doctrinal topics.

Accessibility of Truth.

There is nothing remarkable about me; anyone can do this. No one needs my teachings, writings, or sermons. Everything I have done in my lifetime could be forgotten, and the truth will remain in the King James Bible. God does not need me to share these truths; He has the Bible and the Holy Spirit, which are available worldwide. Topical resources like Nave's Topical Bible can be used everywhere and in any language through various Bible apps.

Why Paid Ministers Won't Teach This.

What I am pointing out may seem obvious to me through topical Bible study, but that clarity may not be evident to others who are accustomed to passively listening to sermons. Paid ministers are unlikely to teach the things I have discussed today because they will fiercely protect their income.

Target Audience: New Believers and Those Willing to Change.

This message was not intended for ministers or members of institutional churches. I do not expect them to change anything; I anticipate that they will continue as they always have. I do not believe that old wineskins can hold new wine. My audience is brand-new believers who have not yet formed the habits of passively attending Church or listening to sermons.

Putting Principles into Practice: Starting House Churches.

I am speaking to those who are willing to put these principles into practice—who would start a house church and isolate themselves from heresy. I encourage them to prevent themselves and their families from being tossed to and fro by every wind of doctrine and to follow Christ, warding off the leaven of the Pharisees that may influence their understanding of the Bible.

The Effect of Leaven on Understanding.

Those who are already members of churches have allowed their understanding of the Bible to become leavened. I am not directing my message solely toward institutional churches, their ministers, or their members. I'm content to leave them alone. Jesus told the Pharisees that they claimed to understand the truth; therefore, they remained in their sins. He did not feel a burden to correct the Pharisees' theology. Instead, He was content to let them believe and teach whatever they wished.

Jesus' Prayer for His Disciples: Purity and Separation.

Jesus did not pray for the world; He prayed for His disciples, asking that they be kept pure from the world and not influenced by it so that they could remain separate. Through that separation, they would find unity and love for one another.

Message for Those Willing to Follow Christ.

My message is aimed at those willing to follow Christ and believe in what the Bible teaches. Some individuals have anchored themselves to a sinking ship, unwilling to leave. If you desire to follow Christ, consider His greatest sermon, which He preached from a mountain. During the Dark Ages, for 1,260 days, the woman mentioned in Revelation 12 fled into the wilderness. Why? Because the recognized institutional Church was persecuting her. The Church demanded that she submit to its doctrines and authority. To remain steadfast in the doctrine of Christ, she had to flee into the wilderness.

A Satirical Look at the Minister Profession.

If you're looking for a job that only requires a couple of hours a week but pays a full-time salary, potentially even making you wealthy, consider going to a Bible university to earn a degree in philosophy. This path can lead you to become an ordained minister who specializes in teaching within specific institutional churches, helping you live comfortably while only working a few hours each week.

The Appeal of Ministry.

It's no surprise that many people are drawn to the idea of becoming ministers. You can dress nicely, earn the respect of your congregation, and generally be viewed positively by your community. What's not to love?

Advice for True Disciples.

However, if you want to be a follower of Jesus Christ, I recommend avoiding Bible school and studying the Bible directly. If you want to understand doctrine, study it topically. To be a true disciple of Jesus, follow Paul's example: work for a living, get a job, take care of yourself and your family, and don't become a burden on others. Avoid taking money intended for widows and orphans, and set a good example for other men. Steer clear of individuals who refuse to work or support their families through their labor.

Caution Regarding Trained Ministers.

Be cautious of those who have been trained by rabbis and are simply repeating what professors have taught them. Please don't listen to their teachings or pay them for sermons that aren't scriptural and may even contradict biblical teachings.

Judgment is With God.

Ultimately, we will either be inside the city of God or outside of it. My opinion doesn't hold much weight, and I'm not here to judge or condemn anyone. I'm a Bible student sharing what I have learned from studying Scripture for myself, along with principles I live by.

Red Flags: Bible University and Paid Sermons.

If a minister has been educated at a Bible university, that raises a red flag for me. I tend not to listen to such individuals, as they often repeat the teachings of rabbis or, in modern terms, professors. Additionally, if someone is being paid a full-time salary to deliver sermons, I have further concerns. In the first-century house churches, elders were not paid salaries, and sermons did not originate in house churches; they emerged four centuries later under Constantine in the 4th century when he began building cathedrals.

Issues with Modern Church Structure.

We can identify several other issues as well. For instance, the existence of cathedrals or church buildings instead of house churches is a concern. The use of pews instead of gathering in a living room is another issue. Furthermore, the idea of passively listening to one person as the center of attention is problematic. In a house church, everyone participated; everyone talked to each other, exercised their spiritual gifts, and edified one another.

Early Church Participation vs. Passive Listening.

The notion that one person should receive all the attention while everyone else passively listens goes against the example we see in the Bible. The early Christians met in houses, not in Jewish synagogues, because they were separating from the institutional Church of Israel. They started something brand new, and their model was house churches, which we should strive to emulate.

My Unpaid Ministry.

This message is not about me; it's between you and God—the Father, the Son, the Holy Spirit—and the Bible has nothing to do with me. You and I might never meet in this life. However, I want to clarify that I am not paid a single cent for writing these letters. I do not receive any donations. I don't have a PayPal account or a Patreon account, and nobody is sending me money. I do not ask for donations. I'm sharing all of this freely.

Working for a Living

I have a job; I work and deliver food for a living through an app called DoorDash. I am struggling financially, and so I would benefit if people started sending me money, but that wouldn't align with Scripture. I am practicing what I preach. My job doesn't pay very well, and I rarely have a total of \$100 to my name. I'm not asking for assistance from anyone. I pay my bills and buy my food, and I teach others to do the same.

Waiting for the Inheritance.

My life is not glamorous. I don't take expensive vacations; I'm waiting for my inheritance at the Second Coming. When that happens, I hope to be an angel, able to travel freely. I want to emphasize that I could live my life quite differently if I chose to. I was a literature evangelist for years, going door to door to introduce Christian books and Bibles to families. I'm comfortable speaking to strangers, and it would be easy for me to introduce myself as a minister starting a local church and invite them to attend.

Avoiding a Paid Ministry Path.

I could build a congregation, encourage tithing, and receive offerings, working just a few hours a week for good pay. However, that would violate my conscience, set a bad example, and ultimately make me accountable on Judgment Day. I am committed to following Jesus Christ, with no turning back, even if that means working for DoorDash, earning little money, and waiting for the Second Coming to enjoy life's comforts and pleasures. I am willing to wait and share what I learn from the Bible freely, without asking for donations.

Rejecting False Arguments for Payment.

I could point to verses such as “the laborer is worthy of his hire” or discuss how tithes supported the Levitical priest, but I know those arguments would not line up with Scripture. I would be teaching something false. Instead, I offer what I have learned freely on Google Drive. I don't have a like button to indicate how many people have appreciated my articles, nor do I have statistics on how many people have read them. I won't know the results until Judgment Day, so I ask you to consider that.

Criticism as Evidence of Following Christ.

I'm not getting paid to share these things with you. In fact, by sharing them, I am often criticized and not popular. Jesus said that if I follow Him, I would be hated by all men for His sake, which I take as evidence that I am on the right track. Sharing ideas that upset the world confirms that I am following the right path, and I am not discouraged by the criticism.

Contrast with Paid Ministers and Denomination Building.

I want to highlight the contrast between my approach and that of paid ministers who receive full-time salaries. I could go door to door, start a local congregation, and even continue establishing more congregations, making myself the central teacher. I could require that all the churches I start send me a portion of their offerings, effectively creating a new denomination. However, I am intentionally avoiding that path.

Uncompensated Sharing of Truth.

My preaching does not support me in any way. I don't earn a single cent from writing my letters, my eBooks, or sharing anything on YouTube. So there you have it. Once again, I want to reiterate that this is not about me at all; this is between you, God, and the Holy Bible. Like Paul, I am following the teachings I share in that I do not live off donations. I do not ask for them, nor do I have a means for you to send them. I work for a living and eat my bread.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Fire Your Pastor, and Tell Him to Get a Job—Part 1

By David Michael Curtis

The document "Fire Your Pastor, and Tell Him to Get a Job—Part 1" by David Michael Curtis argues that modern church practices, particularly the practice of paying pastors and having them deliver sermons, deviate from the practices described in the Book of Acts and the teachings of the Apostle Paul.

Here are the key points:

- **Early Church Practices:** The document emphasizes that early Christians met in house churches, where elders did not deliver sermons but rather oversaw the gathering and safeguarded against heresy. Everyone participated, sharing their gifts. Deacons were responsible for distributing offerings to widows and orphans.
- **Role of Elders:** Elders, also referred to as bishops or pastors, were expected to have regular jobs and support their families. They were not paid from church offerings. The document cites 2 Thessalonians 3:6-11 and 1 Timothy 5:8 to support this.
- **Offerings:** Offerings were intended for widows, orphans, and traveling evangelists, not for supporting local elders.
- **Historical Discrepancies:** The document states that institutional churches, the practice of bishops delivering sermons, and pews are later developments that began in the fourth century with Constantine and evolved over time.
- **Against Modern Practices:** It criticizes the modern practice of pastors being paid to deliver sermons, arguing that this is not scriptural and detracts from the original purpose of offerings. The author suggests that pastors should find employment and that church members should participate more actively in gatherings.
- **Communal Living:** The document distinguishes between biblical practices and communal living, noting that the Book of Acts reveals that early Christians maintained their own homes and held jobs.
- **Equality:** The document emphasizes the equality of all believers, including apostles and elders, and argues against the idea of a hierarchical structure with a superior leader.
- **Call to Action:** The author suggests that church members should consider "firing" their pastor and encourage them to seek employment elsewhere.

In essence, the document advocates for a return to what the author believes are the original biblical practices of church gatherings, leadership, and the use of offerings.

Dear friends,

Church Leadership and Practices

Fire your pastor and encourage him to find a job instead of relying on funds meant for orphans and widows. In the book of Acts, we see the roles of apostles and deacons established in the early chapters. The apostles preached both at the temple and from house to house, and the church continued to adhere to their doctrine. What was their doctrine? It consisted of the foundational teachings that Christ laid out, which are listed in Hebrews 6:1-2. These include turning from sin, trusting God, and being baptized.

The Purpose of the Temple and the Role of Deacons

First, we need to understand the purpose of the temple where the apostles taught, which was to make atonement for the sins of Israel. This atonement was achieved through annual animal sacrifices performed by the high priest on the Day of Atonement. The apostles and deacons preached that atonement was now possible only through the blood of Christ and that forgiveness of sins was no longer attainable through the law of Moses. This is why the leaders of Israel were so upset with the apostles and deacons, frequently accusing them of teaching against the law of Moses.

So, what were the duties of a deacon? The office of deacon was established so that the apostles could focus on teaching and preaching. Deacons were responsible for taking the offerings collected and distributing them to widows and orphans, ensuring that the apostles could concentrate on their teaching without distraction. In contrast to modern deacons, who are often seen as responsible for minor tasks, such as vacuuming carpets in institutional churches, the deacons in the Book of Acts had significant responsibilities in assisting the needy.

The Source of Offerings and the Doctrine of the Nicolaitans

Where did this money come from? It came from new converts who sold their houses and lands and laid the proceeds at the feet of the apostles. One of the seven deacons mentioned was named Nicholas, after whom the doctrine of the Nicolaitans is named in the Book of Revelation. This serves as a warning that even men who had their hands laid on them and were appointed to an office by the apostles could fall into apostasy and become leaders of false doctrines condemned by Jesus in His messages to the seven churches in Revelation.

Apostasy and the Importance of Marital Fidelity

Therefore, we should not assume that everyone ordained, even by apostles, is a true man of God. Someone can fall into apostasy through sexual immorality. The doctrine of the Nicolaitans, for example, stemmed from Nicholas's decision to stop having sexual relations

with his wife. In contrast, the Apostle Paul taught that husbands are to show due benevolence to their wives, love them, and cherish their bodies. Paul emphasized the importance of meeting their wives' needs. Nicholas's doctrine eventually contributed to the idea of celibacy in the priesthood, which forbade marriage.

Elders and House Churches

Let us return to our topic today: Fire your pastor and encourage him to find a job instead of relying on funds meant for orphans and widows. House churches began to emerge after the Day of Pentecost when 3,000 people were converted during the preaching of the 120 in various languages. If we assume there were thirty men per house, that would mean 1,000 house churches started on that very first day. That is a substantial number of house churches!

The early Christians had ample resources to construct buildings because many of those 3,000 sold their houses and lands, laying the proceeds at the apostles' feet. However, they did not use that money to build institutional churches. From the very beginning, Christians met in homes and did not use offerings to construct buildings.

Each house church had an elder appointed to oversee it. While the elder was capable of teaching, the practice of an elder delivering sermons on Sunday mornings did not begin until the fourth century. During that time, Constantine started constructing basilicas and cathedrals. A cathedral is the house of the cathedra, which is the chair of the Bishop. The Bishop would sit in the cathedral while everyone else stood and listened to his sermon. This practice, rooted in tradition, originated in the fourth century and lacks a scriptural basis.

The Role of Elders and the Expectation of Labor

The terms "elder," "bishop," and "pastor" all refer to the same role, with no distinctions between them. During the first three centuries of the church, elders did not stand before the congregation or deliver sermons on Sunday mornings. Rather than this, elders would sit on the living room floor alongside everyone else. The elder was not the central figure and spoke neither more nor less than any other participant in the group. It would be unrealistic to expect that a special collection was made to cover the living expenses of elders who shared a space on the floor of a home. While scriptural evidence supports the notion that the church was to assist traveling evangelists and apostles, particularly during times of imprisonment when they lacked necessities, there is no scriptural basis for the church to pay an "elder," "bishop," and "pastor" or be responsible for their living costs. The pastor is not a Levite priest, meaning we do not owe him a tenth of our income.

An elder, like any other church member, was expected to have employment to meet his expenses and mortgage obligations and support his family. The Apostle Paul asserted that if

an elder chose not to work, he would be deemed as “walking disorderly.” Paul stated that we should avoid associations with those who refuse to work or provide for their families.

2 Thessalonians 3:6-11 NIV

6. In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, we command you, brothers and sisters, to keep away from every believer who is idle and disruptive and does not live according to the teaching you received from us.

7. For you yourselves know how you ought to follow our example. We were not idle when we were with you,

8. nor did we eat anyone's food without paying for it. On the contrary, we worked night and day, laboring and toiling so that we would not be a burden to any of you.

9. We did this not because we do not have the right to such help but in order to offer ourselves as a model for you to imitate.

10. For even when we were with you, we gave you this rule: "The one who is unwilling to work shall not eat."

11. We have heard that some among you are idle and disruptive. They are not busy; they are busybodies.

Does the Bible teach that "a laborer is worthy of his hire?" Yes, it does. Did offerings support men in the ministry? Yes, those were apostles and evangelists who traveled and spread the Gospel. A modern application would be to support missionaries working in famine-stricken regions, who often have less than \$150 a month in support. The offerings were not given to the local elders.

While on his travels, Paul crafted tents to sustain himself and encouraged all the men in the churches he founded to work and support their families. He stressed that anyone who fails to work and care for his family is worse than someone who does not believe. The men, including elders, in the churches established by Paul were taught to work, provide for themselves, and care for their families.

1 Timothy 5:8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

False prophets preach Christ for the sake of greed. In contrast, the elders in the Bible had jobs; they were not paid to teach but instead worked, earned their bread, and took care of their families. Is your pastor being paid to teach? Is he willing to stop taking money from the widows and orphans fund, get a job, and still share his doctrines without being paid to do so?

Communal Living vs. Biblical Practices

A few blocks from where I am driving right now, there is a communal living house owned by the Yellow Deli people. Everyone who lives there works for no pay; they do not earn any money and practice communal living. They believe they are following the principles described in the Book of Acts. However, the Book of Acts does not describe communal living; instead, it shows that everyone had their own house, worked, earned money, and took care of themselves and their families.

In Acts 2-3, we see that the early Christians went from house to house, indicating that each family lived in a different home. The wealthier families did sell some houses; they kept a home for their family to live in. The Apostle Paul emphasized the importance of working to support one's family, stating that anyone who does not provide for them is worse than an unbeliever.

The Yellow Deli is not Christian; it is a cult that originated in the 1970s. The Yellow Deli staff work slavish hours but practice communal living without compensation for their labor. They send all the profits made at the local Yellow Deli to Australia, where others manage the money. Meanwhile, these hippies work for free and own extraordinarily little—just personal items like toothbrushes, hairbrushes, and their wives. They do not share their wives or personal hygiene items, but everything else is collectively owned and not owned by any individual.

This practice does not align with what we read in the Book of Acts or the writings of the Apostle Paul. Each Christian family in the early church had its own home, occupation, and responsibilities to care for its own family. As God prospered them, any surplus they had after supporting their families and widows was given as a free offering each Sunday morning when they met in house churches. This money was used to support widows and orphans in the church who were unable to care for themselves.

Every man was expected to hold a job, and if they declined to do so, Paul directed that they should go without food and be excluded from fellowship. Thus, any man who “walketh disorderly,” refusing to work, faced disfellowshipping until he secured employment.

Modern Pastors and Historical Discrepancies

In many modern churches, there are individuals called pastors who often do not hold regular jobs. Instead, they rely on the offerings provided by the congregation on a weekly basis.

In DeSoto County, we have an independent Baptist minister who owns a significant amount of land and has built the largest house I have seen in the county. This has been made possible through the offerings at a Baptist church in Port Charlotte, which consists of approximately 200 families. This church is conservative and independent, using the King James Version of

the Bible. I would describe this pastor and his family as conservative. However, he does not have a job, nor does he support his family through labor. Instead, they are financially supported by the offerings of that church, which, biblically, ought to go to widows, orphans, and those experiencing homelessness and poverty. He is taking money that could feed widows and is not working to provide for his family himself.

What I am sharing is not debatable; it is a historical fact. It is well-documented that institutional churches were not established until the fourth century, during the time of Constantine. It is a well-known fact that the role of a bishop delivering sermons from a central stage in a cathedral dates back to the fourth century. During the first three hundred years of Christianity, believers met in homes and caves while hiding from the persecution of various Roman emperors.

In those early years, elders did not deliver sermons each Sunday morning. This is not a matter of interpretation; how your church interprets the Bible does not change history. A church could interpret the Bible to say that the sky was yellow, but it would not change the fact that the sky is blue.

The Evolution of Church Practices

In modern times, the roles of pastor and elder are distinguished as two different offices. However, in scripture, the pastor and elder were the same person holding the same office. During the first three hundred years, pastors or elders did not deliver sermons. The early church did not have members passively listening to sermons each Sunday; rather, they gathered in circles facing each other in a living room and actively engaged in conversation.

This practice is described in 1 Corinthians 12, where it states that everyone in the house church had different gifts and was to exercise those gifts each Sunday. Some would sing, some would pray, and others would edify the group. For instance, if someone spoke in a different language, an interpreter was responsible for translating that message. Imagine an English-speaking church where a person gifted in Chinese delivered a message in that language; someone with the gift of interpretation would then translate it into English.

These gatherings typically involved about 30 to 35 people sitting in the living room, facing each other and actively participating in the church community. The modern practice of passively facing a pulpit and listening to sermons is not indicative of true church tradition; this practice began in the fourth century. Additionally, the practice of sitting in pews did not begin until the 18th century.

During the Reformation, when many Roman Catholic churches transitioned to Protestant churches, Martin Luther would ascend a stairway to an elevated pulpit. At the same time, everyone else stood about ten feet lower on the ground floor. They did not sit in pews; rather,

they stood for the entire lecture delivered by Dr. Martin Luther. Aren't you glad you do not have to stand during the sermon, especially if the pastor preaches for over an hour? That method of worship continued until the 1700s.

The History of Pews

In the 18th century, wooden boxes were constructed and sold, becoming the property of wealthy church members. These boxes allowed individuals to step inside, close the door, and enjoy privacy. Many were carpeted, and people even brought their animals to church, sitting inside their boxes with them. After the service, they could lock these wooden boxes.

When we visit Christ Church, where the founding fathers of the United States attended for decades, we can see the pews that were purchased by them, which still bear their names, including those of Benjamin Franklin and George Washington. This was a shift from the wooden boxes, which were no longer in use. Later in the 1700s, wooden benches, now commonly referred to as pews, were developed.

This traditional seating arrangement, with everyone facing forward, encourages passive listening to the pastor's sermon. It disconnects us from one another and limits interaction.

The core purpose of the church was to edify one another, to exercise the spiritual gifts bestowed by the Holy Spirit, and to support fellow members with these gifts. In a pew, everyone remains silent, passively listening to a sermon, while only the speaker's gift is utilized, which is not scriptural.

The sermon, delivered from the pulpit, has a traditional foundation rooted in human doctrine, dating back to the fourth century. This is not open to interpretation. Regardless of how your church interprets different verses, this is a historical fact. You might consider firing your pastor and encouraging him to find employment instead of relying on funds meant for orphans and widows.

The Role of Elders and Deacons in Early Churches

In the first three centuries, the church began with gatherings in homes led by an elder and a deacon. The elder's role was to safeguard against heresy. If someone visited and preached false teachings, the elder would admonish that person once or twice and then avoid further interaction.

The church was intended to be organic, as noted by modern authors discussing house churches. This means that the elder was not the center of attention; instead, the congregation sat in a circle in a living room setting. One person might offer a prayer, another would share a psalm, and in turn, they could read from the letters of Paul or other apostles. The idea was that everyone participated, sharing their gifts and edifying one another.

However, by the second century, individuals began to identify themselves as church fathers, and they created new positions as overseers of multiple churches. These offices did not exist during the time the New Testament was being written. During the second and third centuries, autonomous house churches began sending offerings to these new “overseers” known as bishops. This new class of Bishops emerged in cities like Antioch and Alexandria, overseeing several cities consisting of dozens of house churches.

In the fourth century, bishops would preach while positioned on a cathedra (seat of authority) situated on an elaborately decorated platform at the front of the cathedral, where it was expected that everyone would listen passively. Thus, the tradition was born into history, replacing the active, vibrant, and engaging house churches that the apostles planted with dry and boring institutional churches.

False Apostles and the True Foundation of the Church

While the New Testament was being composed, false apostles were already traveling alongside the twelve apostles, including Paul. The Book of Revelation mentions that one of the seven churches rejected those who claimed to be apostles but were not. Similarly, in the second and third centuries, people claimed to be bishops without genuine authority, establishing positions that lacked a foundation during the apostolic era.

The New Testament indicates that no other foundation can be laid than the one that Christ and the apostles laid. The foundation laid by Christ and the apostles involved house churches, each led by an elder and a deacon. The deacon’s role was to distribute offerings to widows and orphans and assist those living in poverty. Their duties did not include mundane tasks like vacuuming carpets.

The elder was inclined to teach and acted as a shepherd, safeguarding the community from false teachings. He did not deliver sermons in the way we see today; instead, he sat in the living room alongside everyone else, remaining mostly quiet and intervening only to teach or confront heretics. If someone were teaching heresy, the elder would speak to them privately about their offense and then involve two or three others to address the issue, emphasizing the need for repentance. If the individual did not repent after one or two admonitions, they would be rejected from the house church and not permitted to return.

However, there were house churches that did not follow this pattern, and entire congregations were led astray by false teachers who infiltrated these homes and spread their heresies. Later, in the second century, some individuals emerged claiming to hold a special office, such as an overseer or bishop. They asserted authority over several churches and eventually over multiple cities of churches. This concept is a departure from the foundation laid by Christ and the apostles.

Equality Among Apostles and Elders

The idea that Peter is the chief shepherd is contrary to the original foundation established by Christ and the apostles. Jesus affirmed that the gates of Hell would not prevail against it. When we examine the first three chapters of 1 Corinthians, we see that Peter, Apollos, and Paul founded house churches. This text specifically addresses whether Peter was superior to the others. The apostle Paul instructed against divisions, stating that we were not baptized into Peter, Paul, or Apollos but rather into Christ. He emphasized that these three men were not crucified for us—Jesus was. He urged us to stop creating divisions among ourselves.

Therefore, the notion that there is a church founded by Peter that is superior to one founded by Paul is debunked in 1 Corinthians, chapters one through three. This issue is clearly discussed. The churches founded by Peter were not superior to those established by the other apostles. Such divisions were to be rejected.

Furthermore, both the Apostle Peter and the Apostle John identified themselves as elders, indicating that they were brothers and not superior to the other elders despite being apostles. Jesus taught that we are all equal and should regard one another as brothers and sisters in Christ. We are not to call anyone “Rabbi” or “Father,” nor should we view anyone as holding a holy office that is separate or superior to ourselves. Rather, we are to see everyone as equal.

In summary, Peter, Paul, and Apollos all established house churches that held equal status. The foundation of the church is Christ, who died for us.

The Purpose of Elders and the Practice of Gift Sharing

It may be time to reconsider the leadership within your church; perhaps you should fire your pastor and encourage him to find a job instead of relying on funds meant for orphans and widows. When the church began, elders were not meant to sit around without working and living off offerings from the house church while everyone else took care of their families. Why would they do that? You might say a laborer is worthy of his wages, but the elder did not really do much. He did not deliver a sermon each week but instead sat in the living room like everyone else, speaking up only when heresy was being taught. His role was to safeguard the congregation from false teachings. If everything was running smoothly, he quietly allowed everyone else to participate in the church, exercising their gifts and edifying one another.

If you find yourself passively sitting in a pew, listening to only one person exercise their gift—and that gift is questionable and not even biblical—then the members of the church are having their gifts stifled. 1 Corinthians 12 asks, “Are we all the same member? Don’t we all have different gifts?” Yet, the modern institutional church often has only one gift: that of the orator or speaker who delivers lectures. These presentations may include one or two verses

but often consist of human interpretation rather than biblical teaching. It would be better to read the Scripture together without interpretation, taking turns reading a chapter, rather than listening to one person monopolize the time with their interpretations.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Fire Your Pastor, and Tell Him to Get a Job—Part 2

By David Michael Curtis

Based on the provided document "Fire Your Pastor, and Tell Him to Get a Job—Part 2.pdf" by David Michael Curtis, here's a summary of its key points:

- **Critique of Paid Pastors:** The document strongly advocates for firing pastors who are financially supported by church offerings. It argues that pastors should have regular jobs and not rely on church funds, which should be reserved for widows, orphans, and those truly in need.
- **Early Church Practices:** It asserts that early Christian house churches did not have paid pastors or formal sermons. Elders were not compensated and had secular jobs. Sermons became a common practice much later, around the fourth century.
- **Equality of Elders:** The author emphasizes that in the early church, there was no hierarchy among elders. They were all equal, and even the Apostle Paul did not claim authority over the faith of others.
- **Rejection of Hierarchical Structures:** The document criticizes the hierarchical structure of churches, such as the Roman Catholic Church, with positions including priests, bishops, cardinals, and the Pope. It argues that these structures are not based on biblical examples.
- **Authority of Scripture:** It emphasizes the importance of building faith in the Bible rather than in church fathers or later church traditions. The author points out contradictions among church fathers and within various denominations, advocating for adherence to the clear teachings of Scripture.
- **House Churches:** The document suggests establishing house churches with elders and deacons, where participation is expected from everyone, and offerings are used to support the needy and missionaries who teach the true gospel.
- **Financial Responsibility:** It emphasizes personal financial responsibility and discourages taking advantage of church offerings. It asserts that those who can work should do so and provide for themselves and their families.
- **Discernment and Separation:** The author encourages discernment regarding teachings and calls for separation from false prophets and teachings. It advises choosing elders who are skilled in teaching and guarding against heresy.
- **Gospel and Baptism:** The document defines the gospel as Christ's death for our sins, burial, and resurrection and emphasizes the importance of repentance and baptism for salvation.

In essence, the document argues for a return to what the author believes are the original practices of the early Christian church, with a focus on simplicity, equality, financial responsibility, and adherence to Scripture.

“In apostolic times, there was no distinction between bishops, elders, or presbyters (**Acts** 20:17-28; **1 Peter** 5:1-2; **Philippians** 1:1; **1 Timothy** 3). The term "bishop" is never used to denote a different office from that of elder or presbyter.” – **Easton's Bible Dictionary**

Dear Friends

Consider firing your pastor and encourage him to find a job instead of relying on funds meant for orphans and widows. If anyone in the church is walking disorderly and refuses to work, you should not fellowship with that person or share a meal with them. This is intended to make them feel ashamed and encourage them to find employment. According to the Apostle Paul, if someone refuses to work and support their family, they are worse than an infidel.

You are not obligated to provide compensation to a minister for preaching sermons. Elders in the early house churches did not deliver formal lectures or sermons. Additionally, the elders did not visit homes or spend time with their wives and children when the father was absent. Sermons did not become a common practice until the fourth century. Nonetheless, the practice of a wolf in sheep's clothing visiting homes during the man's absence was already in place when Paul composed his letters.

2 Timothy 3:5-6 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts,

The elder was apt to teach, but this was not a compensated position. No financial assistance was offered to help elders cover their living expenses. Instead, offerings were intended to assist widows, orphans, and traveling evangelists, with deacons managing the distribution rather than a treasurer.

The Emergence of Monasticism and Clerical Authority

When looking into church history, we can trace various departures from the foundations laid by Christ and the apostles. One such departure involved a lifestyle characterized by a lack of stable income, leading individuals to resort to begging for money and food. Distinct groups formed, such as monks and friars, who adopted a form of godliness and vowed to live in poverty. This vow was essentially a commitment to disobedience to the teachings of the apostles, who instructed all men to work and take care of themselves and their families.

These monks became a burden on the peasants, who owned no land and were taxed by kings, landowners, and the church. Despite their struggles to feed themselves, they were expected to give even more to begging monks who refused to work for their bread. This practice created resentment among the peasants and misled them into believing that this was Christianity. They were taught that Christ and the apostles demanded that they labor

like slaves, giving all their earnings to landowners, the king, and the church—while also providing for begging monks.

This practice continues today, as some pastors expect payment for delivering a sermon just once a week. Instead of working a full-time job, they often spend only about an hour or two per week working.

The apostles identified as elders, indicating equality among themselves and with the elders in your church. They were not superior to others. In First Corinthians, the Apostle Paul states that he did not exercise authority over our faith. This was Paul speaking, and even as he wrote this letter, which holds authority, he did not have authority over their faith. He was an elder, just like every other elder, who were all equal. The Apostle Paul was subject to the principles he wrote about; he was not above them.

How do I know this? Read Galatians 1:8-9. Paul states that even if we or an angel teach a different gospel, it is to be condemned. If the Apostle Paul taught something contrary to the gospel based on his authority, it would be considered a curse. His writings are scripture, and we are subject to that scripture. It is inerrant and can withstand all criticism. It is to be obeyed, followed and believed.

What I am distinguishing is that Paul did not have an authority invested in him that allowed him to say whatever he pleased or teach whatever he wanted. He had to teach what Christ commanded him to convey. He was an apostle called by God through Jesus Christ, tasked with delivering the message that God gave him.

2 Corinthians 1:24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

The notion that individuals were assigned to supervise various churches, to whom we are expected to yield, is something Paul himself never asserted. He highlighted that the apostles do not exercise authority over our faith. In the second and third centuries, overseers or bishops began to emerge, assuming roles that allowed them to collect offerings from multiple churches and insist that those congregations adhere to their teachings. This marked a shift away from the principles established by Christ and the Apostles. The core message is that we are called to turn away from sin, place our trust in God, and undergo baptism. As followers of Christ, we are meant to follow the Good Shepherd and avoid using terms like "Rabbi" or "Father" for anyone.

The Roman Catholic Church and Hierarchical Structures

Right across the street from where I am recording this is a Roman Catholic Church, where ministers are called priests and referred to as fathers. This directly violates Christ's

commandment not to call any man on Earth your father. That, by itself, signals to me that it is not Christian. Christianity is based on teaching obedience to what Christ commanded. He explicitly commanded us not to call any man on Earth father or rabbi and stated that Christ is our master and teacher. He is the head of the church, and we are all equal—whether we are apostles, elders, deacons, or simply individuals attending a house church. We all have one head: Christ.

In the Roman Catholic Church, there is a position known as Pontifex Maximus, one of the titles held by the Pope. This title, however, is not inherently Christian; in fact, there was no Pontifex Maximus during the time of the apostles. Even if such a position existed, it was not Peter who held it. The head of the Jerusalem Council was actually James, the brother of Christ. Therefore, if Peter became Pontifex Maximus after James was martyred, it would be too late for the church to be built on Peter as its foundation since James was the first leader of the Jerusalem Church, not Peter. Additionally, James was not referred to as Pontifex Maximus.

The office of Pontifex Maximus existed centuries before Christ established the church. In Roman religion, there was a high priest known as the Pontifex Maximus. This hierarchical structure, which included senators during the Republic, is reflected today in the Vatican, where we have a Pontifex Maximus (the Pope) and a Senate composed of Cardinals. Beneath the Cardinals are subordinate leaders called bishops, who oversee specific dioceses and their churches. Each church is required to pay a tax to the bishop, while one or more priests serve local churches.

This is a pyramid structure, and none of these offices existed in the house churches that Peter, Paul, and Apollos founded. In those house churches, there were simply elders and deacons; there was no overseer over multiple house churches. Such positions did not arise until the second century when these so-called Church Fathers began asserting authority and demanding taxes from various churches under their jurisdiction. These roles were artificial, not appointed by the apostles, as these bishops claimed their territories from which they taxed the churches below them.

By the 11th century, a significant event known as the Great Schism had occurred, dividing the Roman Catholic Church and the Eastern Orthodox Church. This schism was primarily caused by the Bishop of Rome claiming a position of authority over all other bishops, a claim that the Eastern Orthodox Church rejected. The origin of this tradition dates back to 606 AD when the Byzantine emperor bestowed the title of "overseer of all bishops" upon the Bishop of Rome. Four hundred years later, the Great Schism occurred when Eastern bishops refused to submit to the authority of the Roman bishop. In contrast, bishops in the West, now known as cardinals, acknowledged the authority of the Pope, also known as the Pontifex Maximus.

This is the history of the church, and it is not open for debate; these events truly occurred. Given this, we ought not only to fire the pastor but also to dismiss the priests, bishops, Cardinals, and the Pope, urging them to find legitimate employment and support themselves rather than residing in extravagant palaces built with the contributions of the poor, originally intended to assist widows and orphans.

Church Fathers and the Authority of Scripture

Throughout the history of the church, the authentic church is depicted as hidden in the wilderness, as mentioned in Revelation 12. When reading a church history book — and I have read several — keep in mind that you are examining a church that has its Church Fathers, bishops, Cardinals, and Pope. Meanwhile, the true church was concealed, living in caves and secretly traveling across Europe as missionaries, distributing scripture during times when possessing scripture in one's language was forbidden. Those caught doing so could face the Inquisition, torture, or even martyrdom at the hands of the institutional church described in history.

These men are referred to as Church Fathers because their influence began when they, like wolves in sheep's clothing, appeared in history, claiming authority over the faith and imposing taxes on local house churches, amassing wealth for themselves.

So, everyone who followed in their footsteps—calling themselves bishops, cardinals, and popes—rests their authority on the authority of the church fathers. It is a house of cards. The church fathers did not possess any true authority; they asserted authority, granted it to themselves, and aimed to make other men their disciples. We have a vast amount of their writing—some say it exceeds one million pages. Within these works, various discussions occur, and these church fathers often disagree with one another. They taught different doctrines and held contrasting beliefs.

The Roman Catholic Church claims that these writings are harmonious and promotes this idea in its schools, presenting selected quotes to its laypeople in churches. Roman Catholics are presented with a carefully curated set of quotes to create a false sense of unity within the Church Fathers' writings. In reality, they contradicted each other.

Dr. Martin Luther, at the Diet of Worms, pointed out that the church fathers, councils, and popes contradicted each other. Because of this, it is impossible to follow these men, as they all say different things, teach different doctrines and contradict one another. This is the state of things; it is the truth. Following the church fathers requires you to choose which one you will submit to, as they do not agree with each other.

Therefore, I encourage you to build your faith on the solid rock of the Bible. The Bible is in harmony; it is unified and can withstand the criticisms of the entire world.

If you are following authorities that emerged after the apostles wrote the New Testament, you are following false shepherds. Anyone who claims a position of authority over your faith is a false shepherd. I want to highlight the same obvious truth that Martin Luther pointed out at the Diet of Worms, but this time, I am directing it toward evangelicals.

If you say, "I am a Baptist," that does not convey much. Baptists disagree among themselves on nearly every aspect of doctrine taught within the Baptist Church. Claiming to be a Baptist does not clearly define your beliefs. There are Baptists who are Calvinists and those who reject Calvinism. There are Baptists who hold one view and others who contradict it across the entire spectrum of Baptist teaching.

Identifying as a Seventh-day Adventist doesn't accurately convey your beliefs to me. There are liberal Seventh-day Adventists who often disregard the traditional teachings of the church and hold differing views on salvation than the conservatives within the Adventist community. Some Seventh-day Adventists are quite evangelical, while others are more conservative and view the evangelical members as apostates.

Simply stating, "I am a Seventh-day Adventist," fails to clarify your beliefs. Some followers uphold the investigative judgment, while others have moved away from it. This distinction significantly alters the understanding of salvation between these two groups. So, do you align yourself with Ellen G. White's teachings or with a contemporary evangelist who has diverged from her principles? Do you believe that only vegan Sabbath keepers will receive God's seal during a Sunday law? Or do you find that notion absurd?

This same issue can be seen when someone claims to belong to any organized church. Each church contains vastly different beliefs within its ranks. This is the issue Martin Luther highlighted at the Diet of Worms. Which type of Roman Catholic are you? There are dozens of variations of Roman Catholicism, with sharp disagreements within them.

Martin Luther, at the Diet of Worms, stated that the church fathers, councils, and popes contradicted each other. I suggest that regardless of the church—be it Baptist, Seventh-Day Adventist, or any other denomination—there are contradictions in virtually every single doctrine, or at least in some core tenets of that faith. This means that you must choose which church fathers within your institutional church you wish to believe in and follow as disciples.

Departure from Biblical Church Patterns

What I am sharing today is not the pattern that was laid down at the foundation of the Church. We are not meant to be disciples of any man, nor should we refer to any man as our rabbi or father. I do not care what the church fathers wrote; they hold no significance for me. I do not read about church fathers in scripture; I read about apostles, prophets, evangelists,

and teachers, but not about church fathers who were bishops over regions of house churches. That office did not exist.

The priest conducting a mass did not exist, nor did a Senate or a group of Cardinals in the Vatican. These things are not found in scripture. Additionally, Peter was certainly not the head of the Jerusalem Church; that role belonged to James. The only thing the Council at Jerusalem commanded the Gentile churches was not to eat anything strangled or with blood and not to commit fornication. It was amazingly simple; they provided just a few instructions in Acts 15: if you eat meat, ensure that it has been properly bled, and do not commit fornication.

The Jerusalem Council and House Church Autonomy

That was all the instruction that James, Peter, and the apostles provided during the Jerusalem Council. They respected the autonomy of the house churches and refrained from imposing authority over their faith. They recognized that Christ was the head of the church, present among them and leading them. There was no need for a bishop, cardinal, or pope. Jesus was in their midst, and He was the head of the church, providing gifts through the Holy Spirit, which the church was to exercise during their gatherings in a house setting.

Participation should be expected from everyone, not just a single person giving a sermon. If your offerings support individuals who do not have jobs and are engaged in self-appointed work based on tradition—not outlined in Scripture, such as giving sermons or conducting masses—then these individuals should seek employment and provide for themselves. They are walking disorderly.

Establishing House Churches and Supporting Missionaries

I suggest starting a house church. Appoint a deacon to handle the offerings. Ensure that your deacon is trustworthy and can provide an account of every penny received. It is important to demonstrate that these offerings are being used for good works, such as helping widows and orphans within the church.

If you wish to support anyone laboring for the gospel, consider supporting missionaries. These are the individuals who were supported during the time the New Testament was written; we refer to them as missionaries today, while they were referred to as evangelists in the New Testament. They traveled from place to place to teach the gospel. Ensure that your missionary is teaching the true gospel: that Christ died for our sins according to Scripture, was buried, and rose again on the third day. Jesus' death atones for our sins, and to receive forgiveness, we must repent and be baptized. Be aware that there are missionaries who focus on teaching a different gospel. Do not send offerings to just anyone calling themselves a missionary. Learn about their principal foundational doctrines. Mormon missionaries

began an in-home visit by presenting an evangelical-like gospel, then shifted topics and became completely focused on Joseph Smith. There is a Calvinist missionary society that has thousands of missionaries who focus on indoctrinating with TULIP rather than the gospel.

The Gospel and Baptism

To be saved, one must hear the gospel, believe it, turn from their sins, trust God, and be baptized in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. Through this process, our sins are forgiven, and we are justified, sanctified, and washed in the name of Jesus and by the power of the Holy Spirit at the time of baptism. If you support a missionary, be sure this is the gospel he is teaching and that it is not merely an introduction to a complex religious system in order to join an institutional church.

New Testament Church Structure and Practices

After baptism, that person should be added to the church. The churches of the New Testament era were house churches, with the only officers being an elder and a deacon. The elder was responsible for guarding against heretics and ensuring that false teachers were not let into the house. The deacon was responsible for collecting offerings and distributing them to widows, orphans, and those in need during times of emergency. The elder and deacon did not keep any of the offerings for themselves. Only deceitful teachers claimed that the offerings were meant for their own use.

The contributions gathered and utilized for charitable purposes were regarded as the fruits of every individual, regardless of the amount they gave. Some enslaved individuals, despite being unable to provide monetary support, were equally considered as bearing fruit.

The early church was straightforward, and what we see in modern institutional churches often resembles a departure from that simplicity. Some individuals may claim to be apostles when, in fact, they are not. Likewise, institutions claim to be churches that are not the church—these are counterfeits.

Discernment and Separation from False Teachings

We are not here to judge or condemn; we will let Jesus sort it all out. There are true children of God within all these institutional churches who are unaware of the truths you have been learning. This is supported by the message "Come out of her, my people," which indicates that God has people inside Babylon. We are not condemning institutional churches or determining who is saved and who is lost. In some cases, both the saved and the lost will grow together until the harvest, at which point the angels will separate them.

If you understand these principles and have received the call to set yourself apart, you should follow Christ and establish a house church. Choose an elder who is skilled in teaching, capable of recognizing heresies, and courageous enough to stand against them. A good shepherd will safeguard the congregation and address anyone spreading false teachings, informing them that they will not be accepted into the house again unless they cease their heretical teachings.

Moreover, appoint a deacon who can distribute offerings on a weekly basis, particularly to those in need within your house church. Encourage every man in your house church to have a job, to refrain from walking disorderly, and to take care of their own family and financial responsibilities.

Financial Responsibility and Protecting Against Heresy

It is essential not to be a burden to the church or to take advantage of offerings intended for those in need. Unfortunately, many institutional churches will not take this step, and they often continue to support pastors from funds intended for orphans and widows. A pastor in that situation should be ashamed for taking money that rightfully belongs to those who are vulnerable.

It is the duty of the elder, who occupies a role similar to that of a pastor, to safeguard the congregation from false teachings. But what should you do if your pastor turns out to be a heretic? Ultimately, you must trust in Christ for guidance, provided you adhere to His commandments. The Bible explicitly tells us not to sit under the teachings of false prophets or listen to their doctrines. We are cautioned to be mindful of their doctrines since even a small portion of leaven can leaven the entire batch of bread.

If you are part of a house church with a faithful elder, you will have someone watching over you to ensure that heresy does not creep in. If not, it becomes your responsibility to adhere to Christ's commandments. He is the Good Shepherd, and we should follow Him. We cannot make excuses for following a false prophet instead of Christ, regardless of how convinced we may be toward a pastor's sermons.

Personal Responsibility and Financial Integrity

If you are attending an institutional church where the pastor may be preaching heretical teachings, you have only yourself to blame for staying. No one is forcing you to attend that church; it is a choice you make willingly. Your attendance is not for God's sake; He commanded us not to listen to false prophets.

What if your pastor is faithful in his teachings but is living off the funds meant for widows and orphans? Even if his sermons are solid, if he is not supporting his own family by finding work,

he is worse than an unbeliever. This practice resembles the vow of poverty taken by monks or friars. A pastor should not depend on the church funds but should work to provide for his own needs.

Offerings are intended to support widows, orphans, and those facing crises—much like those who were in need during the famine in Jerusalem. If you are giving your money to wealthy individuals instead of the needy, you are going against Christ's commandment to give to the poor. Scripture is clear: your contributions should not go to wealthy men but should instead help those in need.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Good Works in First Century House Churches

By David Michael Curtis

"Good Works in First-Century House Churches" by David Michael Curtis examines the practices of early Christian house churches and contrasts them with modern institutional churches, particularly in terms of financial offerings and community support.

Here's a breakdown of the key points from the document:

- **Early House Church Structure:** The document describes how early Christians gathered in homes for worship, shared meals (known as love feasts), read scripture, prayed, and made collective offerings. These offerings were used to support individuals in need within the community, including widows, orphans, and those facing hardship. There was a strong emphasis on mutual support and ensuring no one lacked necessities.
- **Financial Contributions:** Offerings were made based on each person's ability. Those with less gave modestly, while those with more helped cover shortfalls. These collected funds were used for acts of kindness and good works within the community. This is contrasted with the Old Testament practice of tithing, which the author argues was a tax specific to the Levitical priesthood and not applicable to modern Christians.
- **Community Support:** Early house churches operated as close-knit communities where members supported one another in times of need. This included providing for those who were sick, imprisoned, or otherwise unable to provide for themselves. The document emphasizes the love and support within these early communities.
- **Critique of Modern Institutional Churches:** David Michael Curtis critiques modern churches for often prioritizing building projects, mortgages, and staff salaries over serving the poor and the needy. He argues that offerings should primarily be used for charitable purposes and to support those in need rather than funding infrastructure or administrative costs.
- **Emphasis on Good Works:** The document emphasizes that the purpose of offerings in the early church was to perform good works, such as caring for widows, orphans, and the homeless. It contrasts this with modern churches that may focus more on maintaining buildings and programs.

- **House Churches as an Ideal:** The author advocates for a return to the house church model, where communities are more closely knit, and resources are directly utilized to support those in need. He suggests that this model aligns more closely with Christ's teachings on caring for the poor and the needy.
- **Paul's Example:** The document references Paul's example of working to support himself and encouraging others to do the same. It also mentions instances where Paul received support from certain churches while others neglected him in times of need.
- **False Prophets and Greed:** The author warns against greed and false prophets who preach for personal financial gain. He suggests that churches focused on maintaining buildings and paying large salaries may be neglecting their true purpose of serving the needy.

In essence, the document advocates for the idea that Christian communities should prioritize assisting those in need and that the house church model is a more effective means of achieving this than modern institutional churches.

Dear friends,

The Importance of Good Works and House Churches

In today's letter, we will discuss the importance of good works. I want to begin by emphasizing that if you are not part of a house church and are living on a low income, you are at a disadvantage when it comes to participating in good works.

The Ideal Structure of a House Church

Let me describe how things should ideally be within a house church. Believers gather together to break bread, remembering that Christ died for their sins, as recorded in Scripture. They edify and encourage one another, visit and converse, take turns reading Scripture, pray together, sing, and then share a meal, often referred to as the love feast.

Financial Contributions and Collective Good Works

Everyone who attends the house church contributes an offering, as the Lord had prospered them. Those on low incomes can give modestly, like the widow who could only afford to contribute two mites, while others who are wealthier can help cover any shortfall. Together, the collective funds gathered from everyone in the house church are used to perform acts of kindness and good works.

Biblical Examples of Collective Offerings

This practice is illustrated in the Bible, where Paul collected offerings during a famine in Jerusalem to help the church that was suffering from the crisis. This collection took place on the first day of the week when everyone would set aside an offering as God had prospered them. When they gathered together in a house, they would present their offerings, which were always used for good works, ensuring that no one faced lack and everyone had what they needed.

Community Support and Love in Early House Churches

In a functioning house church, individuals didn't have to worry about emergencies or crises. The house church community supported one another, ensuring that no one went hungry or faced difficulties alone. Jesus said, "You will know them by their love for one another," and that love was evident in the house churches that the apostles started.

Diversity and Equality in Early Church Gatherings

These gatherings were diverse, consisting of both poor and wealthy individuals, but it didn't matter who was who. Everyone gave according to their means, which meant no one lacked anything. When there was an abundance, that surplus was used to help other house churches in need due to troubles like famine.

Contrasting Modern Institutional Church Practices

In contrast, modern practices in institutional churches often leave individuals to fend for themselves. Each person is responsible for facing their crises. If you are wealthy, the focus may shift to accumulating more possessions or saving for retirement while still managing your challenges alone.

Early Church Community and Support for the Needy

In the early church, however, everyone was part of a community—a family where no one lacked what they needed. Many early church members were slaves who had no income, and their masters often failed to provide for even their basic needs. Jesus taught that if you have two shirts, you should give one to someone who has none, illustrating the necessity of supporting one another. Wealthy Christians in the early church would help their fellow believers, including slave Christians, fulfill their needs through community offerings collected on the first day of the week in the house church.

Collective Contribution and Recognition in House Churches

The good deeds of the house church were attributed to all its members, which meant that everyone, regardless of their income, was seen as contributing to the work of good. The church functioned as a single community—a body of believers where everyone was recognized for their collective good works.

The Purpose of Weekly Offerings in Early Churches

The weekly offerings collected were primarily used to support widows who had lost their husbands and had no earthly support, as well as orphans—the fatherless children who lacked anyone to care for them. The primary purpose of the weekly offering in the house church was to take place on the first day of the week. It aimed to care for widows, orphans, and anyone within the church who had needs.

Paul's Example and Encouragement to Work and Provide

Paul set an example by working to earn his living and consistently encouraged the men in the house churches to follow his lead. He advised them to work and provide for themselves, urging even those who had previously been involved in theft to find employment so that they could contribute to others.

Contrasting Modern Church Spending Practices

In contrast, let's examine current practices in institutional churches. For instance, Calvary Baptist Church in Arcadia, FL, recently sold a large plot of land to the Wawa Gas Company, which constructed a gas station on Highway 70. The church used the money from this sale to construct a large parking lot and new buildings, which are currently under construction.

This is where the weekly offerings are being directed—towards parking lots, buildings, and church programs.

Wealth, Offerings, and Neglect of the Needy

In another case, a Baptist family here owns the largest house in DeSoto County, along with a significant amount of land. Their wealth was given to them through offerings made to a local, independent Baptist Church. These offerings are directed towards paying off the church mortgage, meeting legally required insurance, funding various church programs, covering utility bills, and supporting the pastor and his family, allowing them to live in luxury. They purchased the land about three years ago and have since built a massive home.

The Reality of Homelessness and Neglect

Meanwhile, there are homeless people in Arcadia who are being neglected. They are living in dirty clothes and lack even necessities, such as water. One homeless man told me, "If you have water, you have everything. If you have no water, you have nothing." He truly understands the hardship of going without essential resources. Yet, the affluent Baptist family continues to live in complete comfort, largely supported by offerings collected at the church.

Tithing: Old Testament vs. New Testament

Many churches teach that one must tithe. But is tithing biblical? It depends on whether you reference the Old Testament or the New Testament. In the Old Testament, Abraham gave a tithe to Melchizedek after the War of the Kings as a form of tax. After the Mount Sinai Covenant was established, the twelve tribes of Israel were given land. At the same time, the Levites were set apart for service in the sanctuary and did not receive an inheritance of land. The other tribes were required to pay a tithe—10% of their harvest—to support the Levitical priests.

Tithing in the Modern Context

Since 70 AD, there has been no temple in Jerusalem, no Levitical priests, and no tribe of Levi to whom one can pay a tithe. The tithe served as a tax intended to fund the Levitical priests. The absence of Levitical priests indicates that no tax is owed to them. Furthermore, only Israelites were obligated to pay the temple tax.

Free Offerings vs. Tithing in Early Christianity

A minister is not a Levite priest—we are not one of the tribes of Israel. Therefore, we are not required to give a tithe of our income to them. This practice was part of the old covenant. In modern times, since the founding of the church, Christians have continued to gather in homes for worship. Instead of a tithe, they gave free offerings. These offerings were not used

to buy land, build parking lots, pay for cathedral mortgages, or cover insurance costs. Instead, they were used to support widows, orphans, and slaves who had no income. The money helped with good works, providing food, clothing, and essentials for those in prison.

Support for Imprisoned Believers in Early Christianity

In the first century, if someone was imprisoned, the prison did not provide for their daily needs. If friends or family did not supply food, the prisoner would go hungry. The Roman government offered no food to those incarcerated. The Apostle Paul often found himself in prison, and of all the churches he founded, the only one that sent him an offering to help feed him was the Philippian church. The others refused to help him. In one of his letters, Paul mentioned needing a coat that he had left behind at one of the house churches, highlighting that he was cold in prison. Likewise, William Tyndale, in the 16th century, wrote from prison that he was in need of a coat and was constantly cold. The church in Corinth—a wealthy congregation—neglected to visit Paul or send money for food or even a coat. The Philippians, however, came to his aid by sending someone with money to help him.

The True Purpose of Offerings

This is what offerings were meant for: to do good deeds, not to build parking lots, buildings, or luxurious houses for ministers. If you are not part of a house church and are living in a low-income situation, you may feel limited in your ability to do good work. I can relate to this struggle. I want to contribute positively, but I have to find creative ways to do so because I lack a community of others to share in funding good deeds.

Modern Church Buildings and Neglect of the Poor

Here in Arcadia, countless church buildings sit mostly empty every Sunday. Some may gather a dozen people at most, and they do give offerings—perhaps they consider these to be tithes. However, that money is typically used to pay mortgage loans, cover insurance, and replace roofs, leaving the church largely inactive in its support of the poor in DeSoto County. Imagine if all of these church buildings were sold and the proceeds were used to help the poor in our community. There would be sufficient funds to provide housing for every homeless person in this area. Which do you think aligns more with Christ's teachings: giving to support a building or using offerings to help widows, orphans, and the homeless?

Complicity in False Doctrine and Church Buildings

If you are attending an institutional church and giving your offerings, believing they are tithes, but the minister is delivering flawed teachings, you become complicit in that false doctrine. If he is teaching another gospel or promoting another Jesus, and you support him financially, you share in his errors. Contributing money to support a church building—what some refer to as the House of God—is rooted in an Old Testament concept. The House of God was the

temple in Jerusalem, and a tax was collected specifically for it. A church building today is not the House of God. You can gather with others in your home. There is no need for a large building, a bank loan, special insurance, or parking lots.

Financial Resources and Supporting Ministry

It's important to evaluate how we allocate our financial resources within the church. While we shouldn't feel pressured to give excessive amounts of money to a pastor so he can purchase a large piece of land and build an extravagant house for his family, we also need to recognize the significance of supporting the ministry. After all, a laborer is worthy of his hire.

The Proper Use of Church Funds

However, the funds contributed shouldn't primarily enrich a 'pastor.' Instead, they should facilitate the spread of the gospel through the work of evangelists. Those who traveled received financial support, while elders who were stationary in the same city did not receive large sums of money. It's essential to note that the terms 'elder,' 'bishop,' and 'pastor' refer to the same office.

The elder, bishop, or pastor was required to work and make an income just like any other church member. The donations were not meant to provide the pastor with a salary or help with his home loan. It was anticipated that the pastor would be employed and support himself, just as all other members did.

Contributions were intended to assist traveling evangelists or those who had been imprisoned. However, anyone residing in a particular town and attending a single church was expected to be employed and provide for themselves. The donations were intended for widows and orphaned children, not for men who were capable of working and supporting themselves, like a pastor.

The Original Purpose of Offerings

In certain denominations, such as Eastern Orthodoxy and Roman Catholicism, bishops often reside in mansions or palaces. However, that is not the purpose for which offerings were intended. Offerings were intended to support essential needs—helping widows, orphans, and those lacking necessities such as clothing and food. Jesus specifically taught us to visit the sick and those in prison and to provide for them.

Collective Fruit Bearing Through Good Works

The purpose of the offerings was to do good works. In early house churches, regardless of a person's financial status—whether they were slaves or wealthy contributors—everyone was considered to be bearing fruit in God's eyes. Paul wrote to one house church, encouraging them to assist him during his imprisonment, stating that this would allow them to bear fruit.

Communal Support and Self-Sufficiency

When offerings are utilized to support people in need—such as widows, orphans, and people experiencing homelessness—that is truly bearing fruit. This was a communal effort, taking place on the first day of the week when the church would gather in a home to collect offerings. These offerings were intended to ensure that no one went without, especially in times of emergency. The church was self-sufficient, providing for its members without relying on the Roman government for support. There was no social safety net. If the church did not support widows, they would go hungry.

Modern Churches and Neglect of Community Needs

In contrast, many modern churches often collect tithes and offerings that primarily serve to maintain buildings, pay off mortgages, or fund church programs. Meanwhile, the poor and needy in the community are overlooked. The church building may be thriving, but the homeless are still going hungry and lack basic resources like water and shelter. It's a troubling reality that while we dress in our best clothes and attend beautiful church buildings, we might be neglecting those in real need, much like the church in Corinth ignored Paul while he was imprisoned.

Independent Churches and Potential for Greed

Many evangelical churches are independent and do not report to a larger governing body. This autonomy means that all incoming contributions remain within that local church. If a minister operates in an independent church with a modest congregation, they may benefit significantly from the tithes collected.

Signs of False Prophets and Proper Use of Church Funds

One sign of a false prophet is the motivation of greed—preaching for selfish financial gain. Suppose an institutional church does not share its resources beyond its walls and is solely focused on maintaining its physical structure, paying for insurance, and covering the salaries of its pastors. In that case, it can lead to a pastor and their family living comfortably, potentially even owning the largest house in the county. The Port Charlotte Independent Baptist church has only a couple hundred families attending, and their collective tithe has helped its minister essentially build a mansion for his family.

Advocating for House Churches and Collective Good Works

I suggest that we meet in houses and collect offerings, using those offerings to perform good works. The good deeds carried out by the house church should be ascribed to everyone in the group, whether they contributed just two mites, like the widow at the temple, or thousands of dollars. In heaven's eyes, everyone is considered to be producing good fruit by

doing good, loving one another, visiting the sick, visiting those in prison, and caring for one another.

The Benefits of House Church Community

Imagine having a house church where you didn't need a retirement fund. When the time came, and you were no longer able to work, your house church would ensure all your needs were met. Picture having 30 or 35 people gathering in a home each week. For years, you supported the poor within your house church, and then, when you grew older and could no longer work, your house church would be there for you, taking care of your needs.

Living Without Worry in a House Church

What if you could live out the teachings of Jesus Christ without worrying about tomorrow? What if you didn't need to store up treasures on Earth for retirement? Instead of building bigger barns to hoard wealth for retirement, you could truly follow Christ's teachings, trusting that you wouldn't need to accumulate material wealth.

The House Church as the Ideal Model

I propose that the only way to fulfill Christ's commandments regarding money is through a house church. In an institutional church, it is every man for himself. The poor and the wealthy are left to fend for themselves; they are told they need bigger barns and to invest in the stock market for retirement.

Practical Application of House Church Principles

Let me explain how this works:

First, we follow Christ's commandment to sell all that we have and give it to the poor. Yes, this commandment is to be taken seriously, just as the early church did. Next, Paul taught that every man in the house church should have a job and take care of his household, as well as his widows. He stated that anyone who does not work should not eat. If a member of the house church refuses to work, the church should let him go hungry to encourage him to find a job.

Roles and Responsibilities in the House Church

Thus, every man is expected to have a job to support his family, including extended family members such as widows. Once he is supported, he should give offerings to the church in accordance with how God has prospered him. Some may prosper and be able to give more, while others, such as slaves with no income, may not be able to contribute financially. However, the house church would still meet the needs of those individuals so they would not go hungry; they might be working, but they weren't getting paid for their labor.

Common Sense and Community Living in Early Churches

The early church employed common sense—every person was to work, take care of their family, and live in their own home. They met from house to house, indicating that even those who had sold their houses and lands still had a place to live. They were not practicing communal living; everyone owned their own houses and had their jobs. When they gathered in a house, they were the church. The term "church" refers to the group of people who assemble, not the building itself.

The Purpose of Abundance in House Church Gatherings

As God prospered them, the abundance collected each week during the house church meetings was used for good works, with a priority on supporting widows and orphans.

Contrast modern giving practices: instead of using offerings exclusively for people with low incomes to do good works, the collected money is deposited into the minister's bank account, which in some cases may already contain millions of dollars.

May God's grace and peace be with you.

In Jesus Christ's name. Amen.

Mr. David Michael Curtis

Scripture Index.

The God of Abraham, Isaac & Jacob is the LORD (JEHOVAH).

John 4:24; 2 Corinthians 3:17; Isaiah 60:19; James 1:17; 1 John 1:5; 4:8,16; Job 23:8-9; 11:7; 37:23; Psalm 145:3; Isaiah 40:28; Romans 11:33; 1:23; Deuteronomy 33:27; Psalm 90:2; Revelation 4:8-10; 1 Timothy 1:17; 6:16; Genesis 17:1; Exodus 6:3; Psalm 139:1-6; Proverbs 5:21; Psalm 139:7; Jeremiah 23:23; Psalm 102:26-27; Romans 16:27; 1 Timothy 1:17; Exodus 15:11; Psalm 145:5; 83:18; Acts 7:48; Matthew 5:48; Psalm 99:9; Isaiah 5:16; Deuteronomy 32:4; Isaiah 45:21; Jeremiah 10:10; John 17:3; Psalm 25:8; 92:15; Ezra 9:15; Psalm 145:17; 25:8; 119:68; 2 Chronicles 2:5; Psalm 86:10; Exodus 34:6; Psalm 116:5; 1 Corinthians 10:13; 1 Peter 4:19; Exodus 34:6-7; Numbers 14:18; Micah 7:1; Joshua 24:19; Nahum 1:2; 2 Kings 13:23; Hebrews 12:29; Deuteronomy 4:35; Isaiah 44:6; 43:10; Exodus 9:14; Deuteronomy 33:26; 2 Samuel 7:22; Isaiah 46:5,9; Matthew 19:17; 1 Kings 8:27; Jeremiah 23:24; John 4:24

The LORD (JEHOVAH), the Creator.

Genesis 1:1; Psalm 33:6; 2 Peter 3:5; John 1:1,3,14,10; Ephesians 3:9; Psalm 33:9; 148:5; Hebrews 11:3,3; Psalm 102:24-25; Hebrews 1:10-12,2-3,2-3; Isaiah 45:11-12,18; Colossians 1:16-17,16-17,16-17; Hebrews 3:3-4; Revelation 4:11,11; 10:6; Acts 14:15; Romans 1:20; Revelation 14:7

The LORD (JEHOVAH), the King of Israel.

Isaiah 44:6; Matthew 1:6; 2:2; 27:11,29,37; Mark 15:2,9,12,18,26,32; Luke 19:38; 23:2-3,37-38; John 1:49; 6:15; 12:13,15; 18:33,37,39; 19:3,12,14-15,19,21; 1 Timothy 1:17; 6:15; Revelation 17:14; 19:16; Numbers 24:17; Psalm 2:6; 45; Isaiah 9:7; Jeremiah 23:5; Micah 5:2; Psalm 24:7-10; 1 Corinthians 2:8; James 2:1; Psalm 89:27; Revelation 1:5; 19:16; 3:21; Isaiah 9:7; Ezekiel 37:24-25; Psalm 2:6; Isaiah 52:7; Zechariah 9:9; Matthew 21:5; John 12:12-15; Psalm 45:6; Hebrews 1:8-9; Daniel 2:44; 7:14; Luke 1:33; Psalm 2:8; 72:8; Zechariah 14:9; Revelation 11:15; John 18:36; Colossians 1:13; Revelation 15:3; Luke 22:29-30; Matthew 2:2; John 1:49; Luke 19:38; John 12:13; Matthew 25:34; John 18:37; 19:19; Hosea 3:5; Isaiah 33:17; Revelation 22:3-4; Psalm 72:10; Isaiah 49:7; Psalm 110:1; Mark 12:36; 1 Corinthians 15:25; Revelation 17:14; Genesis 14:18; 1 Samuel 16:1,12-13; 1 Chronicles 28:6-7

I am the LORD (JEHOVAH). Beside Me, there is No Savior.

Isaiah 43:11; 45:21; Luke 1:47; 2:11; John 4:42; Acts 5:31; 13:23; Ephesians 5:23; Philippians 3:20; 1 Timothy 1:1; 2:3; Titus 1:3; 2:10; 3:4; Jude 25; 1 Timothy 4:10; 2 Timothy 1:10; Titus 1:4; 2:13; 2 Peter 1:1; Titus 3:6; 2 Peter 1:11; 3:18; 2:20; 3:2; 1 John 4:14

Jesus Christ is the LORD (JEHOVAH).

Exodus 3:14; Mark 6:50; John 6:20; 8:58,24,28; 9:9; 13:19; 18:5-6,8; Isaiah 40:3; Matthew 3:3; Psalm 24:7,10; 1 Corinthians 2:8; James 2:1; Jeremiah 23:5-6; 1 Corinthians 1:30; Psalm 97:9; John 3:31; Isaiah 41:4; 44:6; 48:12-13; Revelation 1:8,11,17; 22:13; Zechariah 13:7; Philippians 2:6; Isaiah 6:1-3; John 12:41; Isaiah 8:13-14; Romans 9:33; 1 Peter 2:8; Psalm 23:1; John 10:11,14; Isaiah 40:11; Hebrews 13:20; Proverbs 16:4; Colossians 1:16; Malachi 3:1; Mark 1:2; Luke 2:27; Hebrews 8:6; Isaiah 9:6; Joel 2:32; Acts 2:21; 1 Corinthians 1:2; 12:3; Romans 10:9-13; Psalm 102:24-27; Hebrews 1:8,10-12; Hosea 1:7; Titus 2:13; Isaiah 43:3,11; 45:21; 49:26; 60:16; Hosea 13:4; Luke 2:11; Philippians 3:20; Psalm 45:6-7; Jeremiah 10:10; 1 John 5:20; John 1:1; Ecclesiastes 12:14; 1 Corinthians 4:5; 2 Corinthians 5:10; 2 Timothy 4:1; Isaiah 7:14; Matthew 1:23; 1 Timothy 6:15; Revelation 1:5; 17:14; 19:16; 1 Samuel 2:2; Acts 3:14; 1 Corinthians 15:47; Genesis 2:3; Matthew 12:8; Acts 10:36; Romans 10:11-13; Matthew 26:63-67; John 1:14; 3:16,18; 1 John 4:9; Acts 20:28; John 10:30; 12:45; 14:7-10; 17:10; 14:16; 15:26; 5:23; 16:15; 5:17; 1 Thessalonians 3:11; 2 Thessalonians 2:16-17; Proverbs 30:4; Matthew 11:27; Isaiah 40:28; John 1:3; Colossians 1:16; Hebrews 1:2; Nehemiah 9:6; Colossians 1:17; Hebrews 1:3; Colossians 2:9; Hebrews 1:3; John 5:21; 6:40,54; 2:19; 10:18; Isaiah 9:6; Micah 5:2; John 1:1; Colossians 1:17; Hebrews 1:8-10; Revelation 1:8; Matthew 18:20; 28:20; John 3:13; Psalm 45:3; Philippians 3:21; Revelation 1:8; John 16:30; 21:17; 1 Kings 8:39; Luke 5:22; Ezekiel 11:5; John 2:24-25; Malachi 3:6; Hebrews 1:12; 13:8; Colossians 3:13; Mark 2:7,10; Jeremiah 3:15; Ephesians 4:11-13; Isaiah 54:5; Ephesians 5:25-32; Isaiah 62:5; Revelation 21:2,9; Acts 7:59; 2 Corinthians 12:8-9; Psalm 2:12; 1 Peter 2:6; Jeremiah 17:5,7; Revelation 5:9; Titus 2:14; Ephesians 5:27; Jude 24-25; Romans 6:11; Galatians 2:19; 2 Corinthians 5:15; John 20:28; Genesis 17:1; 48:15; 32:24-30; Hosea 12:3-5; Judges 6:22-24; 13:21-22

Jesus Christ is the Rock on which the Church is Built.

Matthew 16:18; Deuteronomy 32:3-4,31; 1 Peter 2:22; 2 Corinthians 5:21; John 1:42; Luke 5:8; 1 Samuel 2:2; 2 Samuel 22:32; Psalm 18:31; 1 Corinthians 10:4; 3:11; Matthew 21:42; Mark 12:10; Luke 20:17; Acts 4:11; Ephesians 2:20; 1 Peter 2:7-9; Colossians 2:10; 1 Chronicles 29:11; Psalm 57:11; Daniel 4:37; Romans 16:27; Galatians 3:16; Colossians 1:16-18; Ephesians 1:20-23; 4:15-16; 5:23; Colossians 1:18-19; Philippians 2:9-11; 1 Peter 3:22; 5:11; 2 Peter 3:18; Jude 25; Revelation 4:8-11; 5:9-14; Psalm 47:2; Revelation 5:11-14; 7:12; 19:1,6; Psalm 83:18; Jeremiah 10:10; 1 Timothy 1:17; 6:13-16; Revelation 17:14; 19:16; John 18:36; Matthew 6:10,13; Daniel 2:44-45; 4:34; 7:13-14; Matthew 26:63-64; Deuteronomy 32:3; Job 36:3; Psalm 68:34; Deuteronomy 32:31; Matthew 7:21-29; Exodus 17:5-7,5-7; Numbers 20:7-11,7-11; 1 Corinthians 10:4; John 4:14

Jesus Christ is the Head of the Church.

Psalm 118:22; Matthew 21:42; Ephesians 1:22; Matthew 21:42; Ephesians 4:12; 5:23; 1 Corinthians 11:3; Ephesians 1:22; Colossians 1:18; Matthew 10:1; 28:19; John 20:21; Matthew 28:19; Luke 22:19-20; Psalm 68:18; Ephesians 4:8; Colossians 2:10,18-19

Jesus Christ is the Good Shepherd.

Isaiah 40:11; Hebrews 13:20; Genesis 49:24; Isaiah 40:11; Ezekiel 34:23; 37:24; 1 Peter 5:4; John 10:11,14; Micah 5:4; Hebrews 13:20; John 10:14,27,3; Isaiah 40:11; John 10:16; Psalm 23:3; John 10:3-4; Psalm 23:1-2; Isaiah 40:11; Jeremiah 31:10; Ezekiel 34:10; Zechariah 9:16; John 10:28; Zechariah 13:7; Matthew 26:31; John 10:11,15,28; 1 Samuel 16:11

Jesus Christ is the High Priest Over the Church.

Hebrews 10:21; 2:17; 3:1; 4:14-15; 5:1,5,10; 6:20; Psalm 110:4; Hebrews 5:6; 7:15,17,24,26,28; 8:1,3; 9:7,11,25; 10:21; 13:11; 3:1; 5:4-5; 7:11,16; 8:1-2,6; 7:20-21,23-25,28,26,28; 3:2; 7:27; 9:14,26,13-14,23; 7:27; 9:25-26; 2:17; 9:12; 4:14; 10:12; 9:24; 2:18; 4:15; 7:25; 9:24; Numbers 6:23-26; Acts 3:26; Zechariah 6:13; Hebrews 4:14; Ephesians 2:13-18; Hebrews 9:15; 12:24; 1 Timothy 2:5; Hebrews 8:6; 12:24; Deuteronomy 5:5; Galatians 3:19; Genesis 14:18-20; Exodus 40:12-15; Numbers 16:48

Jesus Christ is the Only Mediator Between God & Men.

Ephesians 2:13-18; Hebrews 9:15; 12:24; 1 Timothy 2:5; Hebrews 8:6; 12:24; Deuteronomy 5:5; Galatians 3:19; Numbers 16:48

Jesus Christ is the Prophet Foretold by Moses.

Deuteronomy 18:15,18; Acts 3:22; 7:37; Deuteronomy 34:10; John 1:21; Matthew 11:3; 21:11; Luke 7:16; 24:19; John 4:19,25,42; 6:14; 7:16; 12:49; Isaiah 42:1; 61:1; Luke 4:18; John 3:34; Matthew 11:27; John 3:2,13; 17:6,14,26; 8:26; 12:49; 14:10; 15:15; 17:8,16; Matthew 4:23; 11:5; Luke 4:43; Matthew 24:3-35; Luke 19:41,44; 4:43; John 17:8; Hebrews 3:2; Revelation 1:5; 3:14; Luke 2:40,47,52; Matthew 13:54; Mark 1:27; Luke 4:32; John 7:46; Isaiah 42:2; Matthew 12:17-20; Deuteronomy 18:15; Matthew 17:5; Acts 3:22; 7:37; Deuteronomy 18:19; Acts 3:23; Hebrews 2:3; John 12:49-50; 3:11,32; 5:30; 6:38-40; 8:26,42; 14:10; 15:15; 17:8; Revelation 1:1; Deuteronomy 18:15

The Human Nature of Christ.

Matthew 1:1-17; Romans 1:3-4; Hebrews 4:15; 1 Timothy 2:5; Hebrews 2:17; Galatians 4:4-5; 1 Corinthians 15:21; Romans 6:15,19; Matthew 1:18; Luke 1:31; Matthew 1:16; 2:2; Luke 2:7,11; John 1:14; Hebrews 2:14; Matthew 26:38; Luke 23:46; Acts 2:31; Luke 2:21,52; 19:41; John 11:35; Matthew 4:2; 21:18; John 4:7; 19:28; Matthew 8:24; Mark 4:38; John 4:6; Isaiah 53:3-4; Matthew 26:67; Luke 22:64; 23:11; Matthew 27:26; John 19:1; Psalm 22:16; Luke 23:33; John 19:30,34; Matthew 27:59-60; Acts 3:15; 2 Timothy 2:8; Acts 3:22; Philippians 2:7-8; Hebrews 7:26,28; 1 John 3:5; 1 Peter 2:22; Hebrews 4:15; John 18:38; 8:46; Luke 24:39; John 20:27; 1 John 1:1-2; Genesis 3:15; Isaiah 7:14; Jeremiah 31:22; Luke 1:31; Galatians 4:4; Genesis 22:18; Galatians 3:16;

Hebrews 2:16; 2 Samuel 7:12,16; Mark 10:47; Acts 2:30; 13:23; Romans 1:3; Matthew 8:20; 16:13; John 4:2; Mark 6:3; John 7:27; 19:5; Acts 2:22; 1 John 4:3; 2 John 7

The Angel of the LORD.

Genesis 18:1-2,13,16-17,22; 31:11-13; Amos 1; Hosea 12:3-5; Genesis 32:24-30; Exodus 3:2-6; Amos 1; Joshua 5:13-15; Colossians 2:18; Revelation 19:10; 22:8-9; Matthew 4:9-10

Michael the Archangel, "Your Prince."

Daniel 10:21; 12:1; 9:25; Luke 10:18; Revelation 12:7-9; Matthew 1:21; Micah 5:2; Revelation 3:12; Daniel 8:25; 1 Timothy 6:15; Revelation 17:14; 19:16; Daniel 8:25; Isaiah 9:6; Acts 3:15; 5:29-31; John 3:16; Hebrews 1:5-8; Isaiah 9:6-7; Deuteronomy 34:5-6; Jude 9; Matthew 17:1-3; 1 Thessalonians 4:16; Jeremiah 25:30; John 11:25

Created Angels are not to be Worshiped.

Colossians 2:18; Revelation 19:10; 22:8-9; Nehemiah 9:6; Colossians 1:16; Nehemiah 9:6; Philippians 2:9-11; Hebrews 1:6

Jesus Christ is the Son of God.

Mark 1:1; John 20:31; Acts 28:23-28; Matthew 3:17; 17:5; John 1:18; Hebrews 1:5,8; Matthew 10:32; Luke 12:8; Romans 1:3-4; 1 John 4:2; 1 Corinthians 12:3; Romans 10:9-10; 14:11; Philippians 2:11; 1 John 4:15; Matthew 16:13-20; 14:33; 16:16; 27:54; Mark 8:29; 15:39; John 1:34,49; 6:69; 9:35-38; 11:27; 20:28-29; Acts 8:37; 9:19-22; Matthew 26:63-64; Daniel 7:13-14; John 18:33-36; 1 Timothy 6:12-13; 2 Timothy 1:8; Revelation 12:11; 1 John 5:5,20; Matthew 26:63-65; John 19:15,21; Matthew 9:3; Luke 5:21; John 10:33,36; 18:40; Acts 3:13-14; Luke 12:9; 1 John 2:22-23; 4:3; Matthew 10:33; 2 Timothy 2:12; 2 Peter 2:1; Jude 4,15; John 3:18,36; Matthew 21:32; Acts 2:37-41; 1 John 5:1; Ezekiel 36:26; 2 Corinthians 5:17; Romans 10:9-13; Ephesians 1:13; John 1:12-13; 3:3,5-6; 6:44-45; Matthew 7:7-8; John 14:13-14; Psalm 51:1-13

The Trinity & Scriptural Evidence for It

Genesis 1:26; 3:22; 11:7; 4; 2:24; Deuteronomy 6:4; Proverbs 30:4; Ecclesiastes 12:1; Isaiah 54:5; 6:8; 48:16; Amos 1; Isaiah 63:9-10; Psalm 2:1-9; 45:6-8; 110:1-5; Matthew 3:16-17; John 14:16; Matthew 28:19-20; 2 Corinthians 13:14; John 1:14; 14:16,26; 15:26; Genesis 1:1,26; 3:22; 11:7; 2:24; Deuteronomy 6:4; Proverbs 30:4; Ecclesiastes 12:1; Isaiah 54:5; 6:8; 48:16; Amos 1; Isaiah 63:9-10; Psalm 2:1-9; 45:6-8; 110:1-5; Matthew 3:16-17; 4:1; John 14:16,26; Matthew 28:19-20; 2 Corinthians 13:14; John 6:44-46; Romans 1:7; 1 Peter 1:2; Isaiah 9:6; John 1:1; 20:28; 1 Timothy 3:16; Titus 2:13; Hebrews 1:8; Acts 5:3-4; Hebrews 9:14

The Death of Christ

Isaiah 53:8; Daniel 9:26; Zechariah 13:7; Isaiah 53:6,10; Luke 24:46; Acts 17:3; Matthew 20:28; Ephesians 5:2; 1 Thessalonians 5:10; Isaiah 53:12; Matthew 26:53; John 10:17-18; Isaiah 53:9; Matthew 20:18-19; Numbers 21:8; John 3:14; Hebrews 12:2; Galatians 3:13; Philippians 2:8; 1 Corinthians 1:23,18,23; Matthew 27:22-23,26-35; Isaiah 53:12; Matthew 27:38,45,51-53; Romans 6:3-8; Galatians 2:20; Luke 22:19-20; 1 Corinthians 11:26-29

The Resurrection of Jesus Christ

Psalms 16:10; Acts 13:34-35; Matthew 20:19; Mark 9:9; 14:28; John 2:19-22; Luke 24:45-46; 1 Corinthians 15:17; Romans 4:25; 8:34; 1 Corinthians 15:19,14,14,17; Psalm 2:7; Acts 13:33; Romans 1:4; Acts 2:24; 3:15; Romans 8:11; Ephesians 1:20; Colossians 2:12; John 2:19; 10:18; 1 Peter 3:18; Mark 16:9; Luke 24:46; Acts 10:40; 1 Corinthians 15:4; Mark 9:10; John 20:9; Mark 16:13; Luke 24:9,11,37-38; Mark 16:14,9; John 20:18; Matthew 28:9; Luke 24:34,13-31; John 20:19,24,26; 21:1; Matthew 28:16-17; 1 Corinthians 15:6-7; Luke 24:51; Acts 1:9; 1 Corinthians 15:7-8; Matthew 27:63-66; Luke 24:35,39,43; Matthew 28:5-7; Luke 24:4-7,23; Acts 1:22; 2:32; 3:15; 4:33; Matthew 28:11-15; Acts 25:19; 26:23; 1 Peter 1:3,21; Philippians 3:10; 2 Timothy 2:8; Romans 6:5; 1 Corinthians 15:49; Philippians 3:21; Romans 6:4; Colossians 2:12; Acts 26:23; 1 Corinthians 15:20,23,14-15; Acts 4:10-11; 17:31; Genesis 22:13; Hebrews 11:19; Jonah 2:10; Matthew 12:40

The Ascension of Jesus Christ

Psalms 24:7; 68:18; Ephesians 4:7-8; John 6:62; 7:33; 14:28; 1; 16:5; 20:17; Acts 1:3,9; Luke 24:50; Mark 11:1; Acts 1:12; Luke 24:50; Hebrews 9:12; 10:12; Psalm 68:18; Luke 24:26; Ephesians 1:20-21; 1 Peter 3:22; Hebrews 6:20; Romans 8:34; Hebrews 9:24; John 16:7; Acts 2:33; Psalm 68:18; Ephesians 4:8,11; John 14:2; Acts 1:10-11; Leviticus 16:15; Hebrews 9:7,9,12

The Judgment Seat of Christ.

Psalms 62:12; Job 34:11; Proverbs 24:12; Jeremiah 32:19; Ezekiel 7:27; 18:30; 33:20; Matthew 16:27; Romans 2:6; 1 Corinthians 3:8; 2 Corinthians 5:10; Ephesians 6:8; Colossians 3:25; 1 Peter 1:17; Revelation 22:12; 2 Corinthians 5:10; 1 Kings 8:32,39; Job 34:11; Psalm 62:12; Isaiah 3:10-11; Romans 2:5-10; 1 Corinthians 4:5; Galatians 6:7-8; Ephesians 6:8; Colossians 3:24-25; Revelation 2:23; 20:12-13; 22:12; Deuteronomy 10:17; 2 Chronicles 19:7; Job 34:19; Ezekiel 33:20; Matthew 22:16; Acts 10:34-35; Romans 2:10-11; Galatians 2:6; Ephesians 6:9; Colossians 3:25; 1 Peter 1:17

“This Do in Remembrance of Me.” The Lord’s Supper.

Luke 22:14-20; 1 Corinthians 15:1-4; 11:23-26; Isaiah 53; 1 Corinthians 11:25-26; Luke 24:35; Acts 2:42,46; Luke 9:23; Romans 5:10-11

The Cross, Christ's Finished Work.

Hebrews 10:10,14; Revelation 1:5; 1 Corinthians 6:11; Romans 5:9; Ephesians 1:7; John 1:7; Romans 5:11,1; 2 Corinthians 5:17-21

"Believe the Gospel" – Faith.

Hebrews 11:1,1; Matthew 11:22; 1 John 3:23; John 14:1; 6:29; Acts 20:21; John 5:46; Acts 24:14; 2 Chronicles 20:20; Acts 26:27; Mark 1:15; Romans 4:21; Hebrews 11:13; Romans 12:3; Ephesians 2:8; 6:23; Philippians 1:29; Acts 11:21; 1 Corinthians 2:5; 2 Peter 1:1; Jude 20; 1 Thessalonians 1:3; Mark 1:15; Luke 24:47; Acts 11:21; Hebrews 12:2; 1 Corinthians 12:9; John 20:31; 2 Timothy 3:15; John 17:20; Acts 8:12; Romans 10:14-15,17; 1 Corinthians 3:5; Acts 10:43; Romans 3:25; Acts 13:39; Romans 3:21-22,28; 5:1; Galatians 2:16; Mark 16:16; Acts 16:31; 15:9; 26:18; John 12:36,46; 20:31; Galatians 2:20; John 3:15; 6:40,47; Hebrews 4:3; 1 Timothy 1:4; Jude 20; 1 Peter 1:5; John 1:12; Galatians 3:26; Romans 5:2; Ephesians 3:12; Galatians 3:22; Hebrews 6:12; Acts 11:15-17; Galatians 3:14; Ephesians 1:13; Hebrews 11:6; Romans 4:16; Hebrews 4:2; 1 Timothy 1:18; 6:12; 1 Thessalonians 2:13; Romans 10:3-4; 3:27; Galatians 5:6; 1 Timothy 1:5; Philemon 5; Romans 5:2; Acts 16:34; 1 Peter 1:8; Romans 15:13; Isaiah 28:16; 1 Peter 2:6; Psalm 116:10; 2 Corinthians 4:13; 1 Peter 2:7; Ephesians 3:17; Matthew 21:22; James 1:6; John 10:26-27; 1 John 5:1; Galatians 2:20; Romans 11:20; 2 Corinthians 1:24; Romans 4:12; 2 Corinthians 5:7; Hebrews 11:2; 1 John 5:4-5; 1 Peter 5:9; Ephesians 6:16; Psalm 27:13; 1 Timothy 4:10; Hebrews 11:13; 1 Timothy 1:5; 2 Timothy 1:5; 2 Corinthians 8:7; Acts 14:22; Colossians 1:23; Romans 4:20-24; 1 Corinthians 16:13; Colossians 1:23; 1 Timothy 1:19; Luke 17:5; 2 Timothy 1:12; Hebrews 10:22; James 2:21-25,17,20,26; 2 Corinthians 13:5; Matthew 17:20; 21:21; Mark 9:23; Romans 14:22-23; 1 Peter 1:6-7; James 1:3; Acts 8:13,21; John 10:25; 12:37; Acts 19:9; 2 Thessalonians 3:2; Ephesians 6:16; 1 Thessalonians 5:8; Numbers 13:30; Job 19:25; Daniel 3:17; 6:10,23; Matthew 16:16; Luke 7:50; John 1:49; 4:39; 11:27; 16:30; 20:28; Acts 6:5,7; 8:37; 11:24; 13:12; 16:31,34; Romans 1:8; Colossians 1:4; 1 Thessalonians 1:3; 2 Timothy 1:5; 4:7; Hebrews 11:4-5,7-8,17,20-22,24,27,31-33,39

"Repent!" What Is Repentance?

Isaiah 45:22; Matthew 6:19-21; Acts 14:15; 2 Corinthians 5:17; Colossians 3:2; 1 Thessalonians 1:9; Hebrews 12:1-2; Ezekiel 18:30-32; Acts 17:30; Revelation 2:5; 3:3; Acts 11:18; 2 Timothy 2:25; Matthew 9:13; Acts 5:31; Zechariah 12:10; Acts 11:18; 2 Corinthians 7:10; Genesis 6:3; 1 Peter 3:20; 2 Peter 3:9; Romans 2:4; 1 Kings 8:47; Revelation 3:19; 2 Corinthians 7:10; Acts 2:38; 3:19; 8:22; 1 Kings 8:38; Proverbs 28:13; Acts 2:37; 19:18; Matthew 4:17; Mark 1:15; Matthew 3:2; Mark 6:12; Acts 20:21; Luke 24:47; 2 Corinthians 7:10; Psalm 95:7-8; Luke 15:7,10; 2 Corinthians 7:9; Isaiah 1:16-17; 2 Chronicles 7:14; James 4:9-10; Ezra 9:6-15; Jeremiah 31:19; Ezekiel 16:61,63; Job 42:6; Leviticus 26:40; Job 33:27; Matthew 21:32; Mark 1:15; Acts 20:21; 1 Kings 8:33; Acts 8:22; 3:19; 26:20; 2 Chronicles 6:26; Ezekiel 14:6; 1 Thessalonians 1:9; 2 Corinthians 7:11; Ezekiel 14:6; 18:30; Acts 2:38; 3:19; Jeremiah 8:6; Matthew 21:32; Revelation 9:20; 16:9; Luke 16:30-31; Revelation 2:21;

Matthew 11:20,20-24; Luke 13:3,5; Revelation 2:5,16; Hebrews 6:4-6; Luke 15:18-21; 18:13; 15:17-19; Matthew 21:29; Galatians 1:23; Judges 10:15-16; 2 Samuel 12:13; 2 Chronicles 33:12-13; Job 42:6; Jonah 3:5-8; Matthew 12:41; 26:75; Luke 19:8; 23:40-41; 2 Corinthians 7:9-10; 1 Samuel 15:24-30; 1 Kings 21:27-29; Matthew 27:3-5

“Be Converted, That Your Sins May Be Blotted Out.”

1 Kings 18:37; John 6:44; Acts 21:19; 3:26; Romans 15:18; Proverbs 1:23; Acts 11:21,23; 3:19; 26:20; 11:21; Psalm 19:7; Acts 26:18; 1 Thessalonians 1:9; Psalm 119:59; Lamentations 3:40; Psalm 78:34; Ezekiel 18:23; Luke 15:32; Acts 15:3; Galatians 1:23-24; Matthew 18:3; Job 36:10; Proverbs 1:23; Isaiah 31:6; 55:7; Jeremiah 3:7; Ezekiel 33:11; Nehemiah 1:9; Isaiah 1:27; Jeremiah 3:14; Ezekiel 18:27; Psalm 80:7; 85:4; Jeremiah 31:18; Lamentations 5:21; 1 Kings 8:35; Psalm 7:12; Jeremiah 44:5,11; Psalm 51:13; Daniel 12:3; James 5:19-20; Isaiah 2:2; 11:10; 60:5; 66:12; Ezekiel 36:25-27

“God be Merciful to Me a Sinner”–Confessing Sin.

Leviticus 5:5; Hosea 5:15; Job 33:27-28; Joshua 7:19; Jeremiah 3:13; James 5:16; Leviticus 26:40-42; Proverbs 28:13; Leviticus 26:41; Nehemiah 9:33; Ezra 9:13; 2 Samuel 24:10; Psalm 25:11; 51:1; Jeremiah 14:7-9,20; Isaiah 64:5-6; Psalm 38:18; Lamentations 1:20; Proverbs 28:13; Numbers 5:6-7; Psalm 32:5; 51:3; 106:6; 32:5; 1 John 1:9; Luke 15:21; 18:13; Numbers 12:11; 21:6-7; 1 Samuel 7:6; 12:19; 15:24; 2 Samuel 24:10; Ezra 9:6; Nehemiah 1:6-7; 9:4,33-34; Job 7:20; Daniel 9:4; Luke 5:8; 23:41

“In The Name of Jesus Christ” – Confessing Christ.

1 Corinthians 12:3; 1 John 4:2; 2:23; 4:2-3,15; Romans 10:9-10; Matthew 10:32; John 7:13; 12:42-43; Mark 8:35; 2 Timothy 2:12; Romans 10:9; Matthew 10:33; John 1:49; 6:68-69; 9:25,33; 11:27; Acts 4:7-12; 5:29-32,42; 7:52,59; 9:29; 1 Timothy 6:12; Revelation 1:9; 2:13; 20:4

“Be Baptized Every One Of You” – Baptism.

Matthew 3:5-12; John 3:23; Acts 13:24; 19:4; Matthew 3:13-15; Luke 3:21; John 3:22; 4:1-2; Matthew 28:19-20; Acts 10:47-48; 11:16; 16:15,33; 18:8; 19:3-5; Matthew 28:19; Acts 1:5; 11:15-18; 19:5; 2:41; 16:31-34; 1 Corinthians 10:2; John 3:23; Acts 8:36-39; 10:47; John 3:3,5-6; Titus 3:5-7; Acts 8:36-38; 18:8; 19:4-5; Matthew 3:6; Acts 2:38,38; 22:16; Ephesians 5:26; 4:5; Acts 19:3-5; 22:16; 8:38; 9:18; 16:15; 1 Corinthians 1:16; Matthew 3:11; Acts 19:3-5; 2:38-39; Ephesians 1:13; 4:30; Romans 6:3-4; Colossians 2:12; 1; Galatians 3:27-28; Genesis 3:21; Job 29:14; Isaiah 61:10; Matthew 22:11-14; 1 Corinthians 1:13-17; Galatians 3:27-28; Romans 7:1-4; Colossians 2:11-13; Ephesians 4:5; Acts 19; Mark 16:16; John 14:23-24; Matthew 7:24-25; Mark 16:16; John 14:24; Matthew 7:26-27; 2 Thessalonians 1:8; 1 Peter 4:17; 3:20-21; Mark 16:16; Romans 6:1-4; Acts 8:12,16,14-25,36,38; 9:18; 1 Corinthians 10:2

“For the Remission of Sins” – Forgiveness.

Job 25:4; Psalm 130:3; 143:2; Romans 4:4-8; 2 Corinthians 5:17-21; Isaiah 54:9-10; 1 Corinthians 13:4-5; 1 John 4:7-8; Isaiah 55:1-3; 53:10-12; Philemon 18-19; 1 Peter 2:24; 3:18; 1 John 1:7-9; 2:12; Acts 10:43; 13:38-39; 3:19; Colossians 1:14; 2:13-14; Daniel 9:9; Ephesians 1:6-8; 2:4-9; Exodus 34:6-7; Hebrews 1:3; 10:17; 8:12; 9:12,14; Isaiah 1:18; 33:24; 43:25; 44:22; 55:6-11; Jeremiah 31:34; 33:8; 50:20; Jonah 4:2; Leviticus 16:30; Romans 5:11; Luke 1:77; 24:47; Matthew 1:21; Micah 7:18-19; Nehemiah 9:17; Psalm 103:2-4,12,7-8; 32:1; 51:1,9-13; 65:3; 86:15-16,5; Revelation 1:5; 7:14; Romans 11:26-27; 5:20; Zechariah 13:1

“Ye Shall Receive the Gift of the Holy Ghost.”

Ne 9:20; Lu 11:13; Joh 20:22; Joh 3:34; Ac 2:38,38-39; Ps 68:18; Joh 7:39; Joh 14:16; Lu 11:13; Eph 1:16-17; Ne 9:20; Joh 14:16; Ac 2:38; Ac 5:32; Ac 10:44; Ac 11:17; Ac 15:8; Ps 68:9; Joh 7:38-39; Isa 59:21; Hag 2:5; 1Pe 4:14; Isa 32:15; Ga 3:14; 1Jo 3:24; 1Jo 4:13; 2Co 1:22; 2Co 5:5; Eph 1:14; Eze 39:29

“Baptism with the Holy Ghost.”

Ezekiel 36:25; Titus 3:6; Matthew 3:11; John 1:33; Acts 1:5; 2:38; 11:16; 1 Corinthians 12:13; John 3:5; Acts 19:2-6; Titus 3:5; 1 Peter 3:20-21; Acts 10:44; Ephesians 5:26; Acts 2:1-4

“Ye were Sealed with that Holy Spirit of Promise.”

John 6:27; 2 Corinthians 1:22; Ephesians 1:13; 4:30; Revelation 9:4; 7:3; Romans 4:11

“Except a Man be Born of Water and of the Spirit” - The New Birth.

John 3:6; Romans 8:7-8; John 3:3; 1:13; 1 Peter 1:3; 1 John 2:29; John 3:6; Titus 3:5; James 1:18; 1 Peter 1:23,3; 1 Corinthians 4:15; James 1:18; Titus 3:5; Isaiah 43:7; 2 Corinthians 5:17; Galatians 6:15; Ephesians 2:10; Romans 6:4,4-6; Ephesians 2:1,5; Ezekiel 36:26; 11:19; Romans 7:6; Ephesians 4:24; Romans 7:22; 2 Corinthians 4:16; Deuteronomy 30:6; Romans 2:29; Colossians 2:11; 2 Peter 1:4; Titus 3:5; Romans 8:16-17; 1 Peter 2:2; 1 John 5:1; Ephesians 4:24; Colossians 3:10; Romans 8:29; 2 Corinthians 3:18; 1 John 3:2; Jeremiah 24:7; Colossians 3:10; 1 John 3:9; 5:18,4; Romans 7:22; 1 John 5:1; 2:29; 4:7; Isaiah 43:6-7; John 3:4,8; 1 John 5:18

Justification.

Isaiah 45:25; 53:11; 50:8; Romans 8:33; Leviticus 18:5; Romans 10:5; 2:13; James 2:10; Job 9:2-3; 25:4; Psalm 130:3; 143:2; Romans 3:20; 9:31-32; Acts 13:39; Romans 8:3; Galatians 2:16; 3:11; Acts 15:1-29; Romans 3:28; 11:6; Galatians 2:14-21; 5:4; John 5:24; Acts 13:39; Romans 3:30; 5:1; Galatians 2:16; Romans 3:24; 4:16; 5:17-21; 1 Corinthians 6:11; Isaiah 61:10; Jeremiah 23:6; Romans 3:22; 5:18; 1 Corinthians 1:30; 2 Corinthians 5:21; Romans

5:9; 4:25; 1 Corinthians 15:17; Psalm 32:1-2; Isaiah 50:8; 54:17; Romans 8:33-34; Titus 3:7; Romans 8:30; Exodus 23:7; Habakkuk 2:4; Romans 1:17; 3:27; 4:2; 1 Corinthians 1:29,31; Romans 3:30-31; 1 Corinthians 9:21; Zechariah 3:4-5; Luke 18:14; Genesis 15:6; Philippians 3:8-9

Reconciliation with God.

Daniel 9:24; Isaiah 53:5; Luke 2:14; Ephesians 2:16; Colossians 2:14; 2 Corinthians 5:19; Hebrews 2:17; Romans 5:10; Ephesians 2:16; Colossians 1:21-22; Ephesians 2:13; Colossians 1:20-21; Romans 5:6,8,10; 2 Corinthians 5:18-20; Romans 5:1; Ephesians 2:16-17; Romans 5:2; Ephesians 2:18,14; Colossians 1:20; Ephesians 1:10; Romans 5:10; Matthew 5:24-26; Leviticus 8:15; 16:20

Salvation.

Psalm 3:8; 37:39; Jeremiah 3:23; 2 Timothy 1:9; 1 Thessalonians 5:9; 1 Timothy 2:4; Isaiah 63:9; Ephesians 5:23; Isaiah 45:21; 59:16; Acts 4:12; Genesis 3:15; Isaiah 35:4; 45:17; Zechariah 9:16; Romans 11:26; Isaiah 45:22; 49:6; 52:10; Ephesians 1:13; 2 Timothy 1:10; Romans 11:11; Hebrews 2:10; 5:9; Isaiah 49:6; Luke 1:69; Zechariah 9:9; Isaiah 62:11; Luke 19:9; Isaiah 63:1; Hebrews 7:25; Matthew 18:11; 1 Timothy 1:15; John 3:14-15; Acts 5:31; Romans 11:6; Ephesians 2:9; 2 Timothy 1:9; Titus 3:5; Ephesians 2:5,8; 2 Timothy 1:9; Titus 2:11; Romans 5:8; 1 John 4:9-10; Psalm 6:4; Titus 3:5; 2 Peter 3:15; Mark 16:16; Acts 16:31; Romans 10:9; Ephesians 2:8; 1 Peter 1:5; Romans 5:10; Matthew 1:21; 1 John 3:5; Ezekiel 36:29; Colossians 2:15; Hebrews 2:14-15; Romans 5:9; 1 Thessalonians 1:10; Galatians 1:4; Luke 1:71,74; John 3:16-17; Romans 10:10; John 3:3; Matthew 10:22; Hebrews 2:3; 2 Timothy 2:10; Jude 3; Isaiah 51:8; Hebrews 7:25; Isaiah 45:17; 51:6; Hebrews 5:9; 1 Peter 1:10; Romans 1:16; 1 Corinthians 1:18,21; 2 Timothy 3:15; James 1:21; Isaiah 49:8; 2 Corinthians 6:2; Philippians 2:12; 2 Thessalonians 2:13; 2 Timothy 1:9; 1 Thessalonians 5:9; Hebrews 1:14; Acts 15:11; Philippians 1:28-29; 1 Peter 1:5; Psalm 149:4; Isaiah 61:10; Luke 2:30; Psalm 40:16; Lamentations 3:26; Romans 8:24; Genesis 49:18; Lamentations 3:26; Psalm 119:81,174,123; Romans 13:11; 1 Peter 1:9; Isaiah 52:7; Romans 10:15; Psalm 85:7; 106:4; 119:41; 35:3; 51:12; Hebrews 6:9-10; Psalm 25:5; Isaiah 12:2; 1 Chronicles 16:23; Psalm 96:2; 116:12; 9:14; 21:1; Isaiah 25:9; 1 Corinthians 1:31; Galatians 6:14; Psalm 40:10; 71:15; 2 Corinthians 7:10; Isaiah 52:10; Luke 3:6; 1:77; Acts 16:17; Ezekiel 3:18-19; Romans 11:14; 2 Chronicles 6:41; Psalm 132:16; 1 Corinthians 9:22; 2 Timothy 2:10; 2 Corinthians 2:15; Revelation 7:10; 19:1; Isaiah 45:20; Jeremiah 2:28; 3:23; Hebrews 2:3; Psalm 119:155; Isaiah 59:11; Deuteronomy 32:15; 2 Samuel 22:47; Psalm 95:1; 18:2; Luke 1:69; 2 Samuel 22:51; Isaiah 59:17; Ephesians 6:17; 2 Samuel 22:36; Isaiah 62:1; Psalm 116:13; 2 Chronicles 6:41; Psalm 132:16; 149:4; Isaiah 61:10; 12:3; 26:1; 60:18; Habakkuk 3:8; 1 Corinthians 15:57; Numbers 21:4-9; John 3:14-15